



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

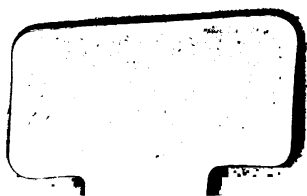
### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



<sup>2</sup>  
JP

824.12.4.25









A GALLOP  
TO  
THE ANTIPODES,  
RETURNING  
OVERLAND THROUGH INDIA.

BY  
DR. JOHN SHAW,

Fellow of the Geological and Linnæan Societies of London, and the Botanical of Edinburgh.  
Author of "Rambles in the United States, Canada, and the West Indies,"  
"A Tramp to the Diggings;" "Travel, and Recollections of Travel," &c.

---

"If Life's a voyage, then let us travel."

---

LONDON:  
J. F. HOPE, 16, GREAT MARLBOROUGH STREET.  
1858.

203. b. 343.



# CONTENTS.

---

CHAPTER I.	PAGE
Preliminaries of the Voyage .....	1
CHAPTER II.	
Emigration.. .....	10
Government Rules and Regulations for Emigrants .....	19
Dietary Scale for Emigrant Ships.....	25
CHAPTER III.	
Voyage to Melbourne .....	28
CHAPTER IV.	
Melbourne.....	53
CHAPTER V.	
Diggers and the Diggings .....	92
CHAPTER VI.	
Voyage from Melbourne to New Zealand .....	125
CHAPTER VII.	
An Excursion from Wellington to Queen Charlotte's Sound ....	129
CHAPTER VIII.	
Journey from Queen Charlotte's Sound to Cloudy Bay and Port Underwood .....	139
CHAPTER IX.	
Journey from the Wairau to Giggerigoo Sheep Station.....	155
CHAPTER X.	
From the Wairau to the Town of Nelson .....	165
Nelson Diggings .....	169
Wanganui .....	180
CHAPTER XI.	
Voyage from Wanganui to Wellington.....	183
Wellington .....	185
CHAPTER XII.	
Aborigines of New Zealand .....	192

CHAPTER XIII.		PAGE
Habits and Manners of the Settlers .....		199
Politics .....		206
CHAPTER XIV.		
Natural History of the Antipodes .....		216
Literature .....		221
CHAPTER XV.		
Voyage from Wellington to Sydney .....		228
Sydney .....		229
CHAPTER XVI.		
Voyage from Sydney to Calcutta .....		236
CHAPTER XVII.		
Calcutta .....		246
CHAPTER XVIII.		
India .....		282
CHAPTER XIX.		
Judicial Reforms of India .....		314
Cotton .....		330
Literature in India .....		332
Board of Control .....		334
Christianity in India .....		336
Concluding Remarks upon India .....		339
CHAPTER XX.		
Voyage from Calcutta to Suez .....		351
Pointe de Galle, in the Island of Ceylon .....		353
Aden .....		355
The Red Sea .....		359
Suez and the Desert .....		360
The Desert .....		362
Cairo .....		365
Alexandria .....		372
Malta .....		375
Gibraltar .....		378
CHAPTER XXI.		
Gibraltar to England .....		384
Cádiz .....		385
Lisbon .....		386
Vigo .....		389

# A GALLOP TO THE ANTIPODES.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### PRELIMINARIES OF THE VOYAGE.

ON my arrival in London to make the requisite preparations for a second trip to the antipodes, I for some time keenly debated with myself whether Liverpool or the metropolis should be my starting-point. Unable to decide, each port appearing to have its advantages and disadvantages, I took up the advertising sheet of the world-wide *Times* in hopes of finding something to assist me in coming to a decision in the matter. My eye, on running over its pages, falling upon the advertisement—"Steam to Australia under sixty days eclipsed," thanks to science, said I, for having achieved one of the wonders of the nineteenth century, for that science has shortened in a most wonderful manner the voyage from these shores to the antipodes; no stronger proof can be produced than the following—that on my way to that region in 1850, I spent 150 days on the water: in 1857 but 72 days only.

It will be allowed, I think, that the inference

B

which I drew from this advertisement was not at all an illogical one, viz., that certain Liverpool vessels of clipper build had frequently run from these shores to the antipodes in less than 60 days, beating a renowned steamer, "The Royal Charter;" but since then I have had a little light thrown on the subject. The facts appear to be that the steamer "Royal Charter" once upon a time performed the outward voyage to Australia in 59 days, but the bottom of the vessel having become faulty, she became so lazy that she was 90 days on one occasion in accomplishing her voyage home. A sailing clipper that started with the "Royal Charter" having made the return trip in 80 days, thereby beating her by ten, the proprietors of a certain line of clipper vessels at Liverpool were induced to send to the *Times* the advertisement alluded to. How far this step was consistent with mercantile honour is for the commercial world, not for me, to determine. And little difficulty will any right-minded man have in coming to a correct decision in the matter; for surely it does not by any means follow as a logical sequence that because a sailing clipper beat a steamer clipper ten days in a home run of 90 days, that the former accomplished her voyage to the antipodes in less than 60 days, as the advertisement, "Steam to Australia in 60 days eclipsed," was intended to make the world believe. Were the champion of all England, while engaged in a running match, to be suddenly seized with paralysis in one leg and articular rheumatism in the other, his antagonist, instead of having anything to boast of, would necessarily feel, if possessed of the smallest portion of common sense, that on such an

occasion a few faded common cabbage-leaves round his brow would infinitely more become him than those noble leaves which everywhere adorn the warrior's brow. The steamer "Royal Charter" in her foul state, and this champion of England with his rheumatic and paralytic affection, appear to me so analogous that they may, without any very great violation of the principles of logic, be placed in the same category.

But notwithstanding this boasted triumph of sails over steam, in the true spirit of the advertisement, I never for a moment felt disposed to cancel the resolve I had previously taken to have nothing to do with canvass in all time coming, having often experienced its disadvantages during my previous voyage to Australia, especially in crossing the tropical calms. In passing from the N.E. to the S.E. trade-winds these calms prevail, and sometimes occupy a space of from 300 to 400 miles, a gap to get over which vessels have been known to occupy the greater part of a complete month, suffering all the torture arising from the burning heat of a tropical sun, the effect of which is not only severely felt by the passengers, but is frequently detrimental, yea even destructive, if not carefully watched, to sundry portions of the wardrobes of those on board; all which delay, torture, and suffering may be entirely obviated under the benign and powerful influence of steam, the screw and the paddle-wheel. For that which requires from ten to fourteen days for its completion, under canvass, may be effected by steam in two or two and-a-half days.

Taking up the *Times* one morning, my eye soon rested upon an advertisement couched in modest



and unpretending language, intimating that the Undaunted steam clipper ship would leave the British shores for Melbourne on a given day, and was expected to make the run in seventy-two days. At first sight I, as a traveller, did not much relish the idea of losing ten or twelve complete days in the passage out, which would have been the case if the voyage had ordinarily been performed in sixty days. But though the "Undaunted" was a new ship, and about to proceed on her trial trip, I, putting a little down to exaggeration in the Liverpool advertisement, and trusting to the "Undaunted" turning out a better vessel than even her owners gave her credit for, resolved to proceed to the antipodes by her, and to fix the matter I at once proceeded to the agent and paid him the half of the fare, requesting him to favour me with the precise date she was to leave Plymouth, the port from which she was to take her departure.

The 28th of May, being the day fixed for the "Undaunted" leaving Plymouth, I took leave rather hurriedly of some old and kind friends in the forenoon of the 27th, and proceeding by an express train in the afternoon, arriving at Bath a little before sunset, where the departing rays of Sol shone gloriously on those hills that form the most beautiful landscapes to be found in the world, as they terminated the boundary line of the horizon, merging into the unique and unparalleled ranges of beautiful hills which characterize the far-famed county of Devon.

On the surface of this widely-extended world of ours there are to be found many, many beautiful spots, which, once seen, deeply impress the

soul, and are conjured up, and majestically drawn again and again, when fancy reigns supreme before the mental vision of the traveller; and, although he may never view the place a second time, the impression accompanies him to the grave, and may never lose its hold, even in the regions of vast eternity.

“A thing of beauty is a joy for ever!”

Such, in my opinion, is the county of Devon. In journeying from the valley of Chamouni to Geneva, some faint resemblance to the Devonshire hills is presented to the eye of the traveller. In the Azores, the physical configuration of the country is somewhat analogous; and, in other parts of the world, faint traces or points of resemblance may be observed, but, taking it all in all, it stands without a rival—isolated and alone in the world—a perfect and unique picture of English landscape.

Finding on my arrival at Plymouth that I would have a complete week for sight-seeing, the sailing of the vessel having been put off to the 5th of June (so much for punctuality), I embraced the opportunity thus afforded me of visiting the Docks, the Victualling Department, Mount Edgecombe, Ivy-bridge, and other places of minor importance. In my previous visit to Plymouth, some twenty years before, I was quite delighted with the execution of the members of the Marine band, then reckoned the best performers in the kingdom. In hopes of finding the band of 1857 equal in all respects to that of 1837, I strolled as far as the barracks to listen to their entrancing notes, but was invariably dis-

appointed until the evening before I was to embark, when I succeeded in my object. But oh, what a falling off was there! I had anticipated a rich treat, from associating them with the band of bygone days; but, though sorry should I be to pass an unjust censure upon any body of men, and above all upon any portion of the musical community, with whom I deeply sympathize at all times and in all countries, I feel bound to state, in justice to myself as a little bit of a connoisseur in music, that I derived scarcely any pleasure whatever from the performances of the then Plymouth Marine Band. If any of the members of the band of 1857 were the sons of those of 1837, the mantle of Elijah had evidently not fallen upon Elisha.

Hearing that the "Undaunted" was about to sail, I hastened to the Agents, when meeting with the captain—and being told by him that I might go on board on the following day; ay, on the afternoon of that day, took leave of mine host of the hotel, and with my trappings proceeded in a small boat to the clipper steamer, then at anchor about a mile and a half from the shore, expecting a hearty welcome, although on approaching her a sad presentiment came over me that all was not right, or that some impediment or impending danger was near.

It being almost dark, I scrambled up the side of the vessel in the best manner I could, but ere I had reached the deck a midshipman greeted me with, "Are you the cabin passenger for this ship?"

And on being answered in the affirmative, he retorted, "Be so good as to see the chief officer,

who is now in the cuddy, before hauling up your baggage."

Proceeding as requested, the chief officer told me that the agent in Plymouth had instructed him to prevent me going out in the "Undaunted," the Government having chartered her for the conveyance of emigrants, the majority of whom were single women, and it being contrary to law and custom to carry other passengers under such circumstances. Perfectly astounded at this peremptory declaration, having so recently seen both the captain and the agent, neither of whom had made the slightest allusion to the subject, I could not help remarking that I had been treated by owners, agent, and captain in a manner altogether unworthy of the character of British merchants and sailors; but the only remark that this drew from the chief officer was, "Certain orders are given, and all I have got to do is to obey them."

At this moment another individual who was seated at the same table with his superior, cracking nuts, and sipping a little of the juice of the grape, addressed me, in a tone of voice which betokened a little sympathy, thus: "I tell you what it is,"—here he paused, for a moment, assuming a judge-like aspect, and then with somewhat of energy as well as gesture arising from the deep conviction that he was pronouncing a most elevated thought, proceeded to deliver himself of the profound conclusion he had come to on the subject in nearly the following words: "If you are determined to go out in the vessel there is only one way of doing it, and that is by signing the articles." This, which might very appropriately be termed shock the second from the electric battery of

the purser, was certainly the full realization of my previous presentiments.

On my way from the ship to the inn many unpleasant reflections arose in my breast; and not the least was, that its worthy occupants might fancy that they had been harbouring a person of bad character—a member of the swell-mob. On my return to the inn, therefore, I related to them all that had passed between the ship's officers and myself. On mentioning the kind suggestion of the purser, the landlord's daughter, a most intelligent woman, said, with an air of remonstrance,—

“Why, if you sign the ship's articles, you will be completely in their power, and you must not be at all surprised if you are ordered to do the dirty work of an under steward, or that of a cuddy waiter. Sign the articles, indeed! why it is even possible that they may maltreat you. Sign the articles,” she continued, with a dignified air; “why, you would be at the beck and call of every sub-official, who might ill-use you and abuse you. Much better would it be for you, a gentleman, to jump into African slavery at once—live in a desert, and die in a bog—than sign the ship's articles, and run the risk of suffering such indignities at their hands.”

At the close of this outpouring of the young lady's wrath, she, acting the part of a Job's comforter, said that I might make up my mind to lose my passage, for great indeed must the interest of that gentleman be who could obtain from her Majesty's Government permission to proceed as a passenger in a vessel carrying from 200 to 300 female emigrants, the greater portion being unmarried.

But, though my prospects were not of the brightest kind, I, with the full resolve of doing all I could to obtain leave to occupy a berth in the "Undaunted," instantly proceeded to the agent's; and, after mentioning to him that I had felt so much interest in the cause of emigration that I had not only aided many emigrants with my personal advice, but had been induced to write a little work in its favour, he advised me to lay my case before the Emigration Commissioners in London, and, as they were expected at Plymouth the following day, to meet them at his office on their arrival. Upon this advice I acted; but, my letter not being received by them before they left London, I furnished them with a copy on their arrival in Plymouth, with a copy of my work on emigration, and with such testimonials as I had with me; and, after waiting rather anxiously for half an hour, I was kindly favoured with a passport to proceed, to the no small astonishment of my friends at the hotel, I being the first to whom they had ever heard of such a favour being granted under similar circumstances.

Those who may do me the favour to dip into the preceding pages may fancy that this lengthened account of myself savours strongly of egotism. I beg therefore to state that they were written, not from anything like an egotistical motive, but to warn all emigrants—or those who, like myself, take occasional trips of pleasure to the colonies—against the tricks of agents and a certain class of shipowners, who, to obtain colonial passengers, are often not over-scrupulous as to the means they employ.

## CHAPTER II.

## EMIGRATION.

IF an historian were to write the history of the latter part of the eighteenth century and the first half of the nineteenth, and leave out the article Emigration, it might be affirmed, I think, with great truthfulness, that he had omitted one of the most striking, important, and characteristic features of the last hundred years. That emigration is one of the grand questions of the day cannot be doubted by any intelligent person at all acquainted with the features of the age in which we live: and to one who has but very cursorily dwelt upon the many startling and extraordinary changes of the times we have seen, I think his attention must very naturally have been involuntarily drawn to the subject. It may be proved one of the grand necessities of the age, and especially applicable to the countries of Great Britain and Ireland. To what extent Ireland is indebted to it is sufficiently obvious to every human being gifted with the smallest portion of common sense. During and after her fearful and devastating famine, she parted with nearly two millions of her native population to till the soil in distant parts of our colonial empire, and sent the

majority of her sons to perform the menial offices in the United States, where the native American is too proud to perform the same, thereby decreasing the poor-rates, and at the same time laying the foundation-stone of that current of emigration from England and Scotland which has enriched her in a manner almost unprecedented, and made her very justly the envy of both Scotland and England under her present very flourishing condition. To what are we to attribute that immense annual increase of population in the British Isles, but to a grand Providential scheme of emigration, while France, inhaling the same air at the short distance of twenty-one miles, is on the decline? I believe it to be our duty, as well as our destiny, to provide this increasing, and starving, and poverty-stricken population with a house and a home, and by so doing lay the foundation and nucleus of a future empire. I shall here quote a few lines from a very interesting and instructive writer upon this question : \* —“In the last forty years 6,000,000 of our people, nearly one-fourth of our present population, have sailed from the United Kingdom to our three great emigration fields—America, Canada, and Australia.”

The national convulsions, the social earthquakes which our little islands have escaped by the safe seaward flow of this its “population-lava” defy all computation. If these six millions of emigrants and their increase, four millions more, had been caged up in our narrow streets and fields, increasing a thousandfold the numbers

\* Emigrants and Colonies, not Paupers and Prisons. By Charles Hursthouse.



of our destitute and our desperate, who will assert that England would now have been England, that the Guelphs would have been at St. James's, the Russells at Woburn, the Stanleys at Knowlsey, the fundholder anywhere? While it has thus advantageously relieved us of our surplus population, to what extent has the merchant, the shipowner, and the manufacturer been benefited? The answer, if truly given, would be, To an incalculable extent. And what is the return that those great interests, after such benefits have been conferred, tendered to the starving population of our country? Why, comparatively nothing; and the Government of the country may be placed in the same ungrateful category. It is high time that both the Government and the legislature, and above all that the mercantile interest should be aroused from their lethargy upon this all-important and vital interest. Such has been the gratitude of some of our shipowners, that, in lieu of aiding the starving population of our country with pecuniary assistance and good vessels, they have left them to provide their own funds, and have most unfeelingly consigned them to ships that have not been seaworthy, and so sent them to colonize in the *terra incognita* of Neptune at the bottom of the ocean.

When writing upon this subject six years since, on my return from Australia and New Zealand, I made the best appeal to the sympathies of the Government and to the country, by stating that the wool and the grain crops of the antipodes would turn out both valueless for the year, from the great scarcity of labour, if a fresh stream of emigration were not quickly poured into those

paths to the relief of the sheep squatter and agriculturist. At that time, I strongly recommended the people to take up the question and make a powerful appeal to the Government of the day, and, at the same time to get up subscriptions for the furtherance of emigration. I am happy to find, since writing the above, that two emigration societies have sprung into existence; the one headed by the Duke of Wellington, and another bearing the name of the "Ladies' Emigration Society." It is to be hoped that, after such a good example from the Duke of Wellington and the Ladies, that the Government, the merchants, the shipowners, and the manufacturers, will not be found in the background, but stand nobly forward in the good cause of emigration, by instituting each its Emigration Society. The *Times* fully attests the advantages of emigration, in this extract, "There are upwards of 130,000 able-bodied paupers in the unions of England and Wales. Taking their maintenance at £8 per head, these persons annually cost £1,040,000. Suppose it cost £24 per head to remove them to Australia, the total expense of the operation would be £3,112,000. If this sum were raised by way of loan on the poor-rates, the interest, at 3 per cent., would be little more than £93,000. Every emigrant might be bound to pay back his passage money as soon as he was able—an obligation in which many would fail, but which many would also perform. It is difficult to estimate the amount which would thus be returned; but, even, were not a single shilling repaid, the difference between £93,000 and £1,040,000 leaves a good margin for a sinking fund. There

are not many financial operations the result of which would at once be so certain and so brilliant."

The following from Mr. Charles Hursthouse's interesting book I partly agree with, and which, I think, directly bears upon the subject in question:—"Of the 1,000 persons who almost daily leave us, only some 400 go to our colonies, the 600 go to the United States. In the last ten years, whilst 2,000,000 of our surplus population have gone to the United States, fewer than 1,000,000 have gone to our various colonies. Now, even in a commercial pecuniary point of view, this is a fact to be deplored. English colonists, especially English-Australian colonists, consume British manufactures to quadruple the amount per head consumed by American citizens; and if the whole of these 3,000,000 of our countrymen had gone to Canada, and Australia, and Africa, and New Zealand, instead of two-thirds of them going to a foreign country, we should have had customers for some millions of pounds more of our manufactures; and should, probably, have been able to import double quantities of gold, wool, and raw produce in return. But the commercial loss, though heavy, is not the greatest loss. We lose our customers; but what is worse, we lose our countrymen. The most valuable article which ever leaves our shores—the emigrant—goes by thousands, goes by tens of thousands, goes by hundreds of thousands, to increase the wealth and strength of a rival power. State system emigrationists say that these tens and hundreds of thousands of our countrymen should go to people our own countries in Canada, Aus-

tralia, Africa, and New Zealand ; that under a sound state system of emigration they would go thither and thus marvellously increase our national wealth and strength." Mr. Hursthouse, like many other English writers, has somewhat of the prejudice of his own countrymen against America. That country, with all its faults, has clearly demonstrated the fact than man can govern himself, and that very effectually too ; and especially have the Americans succeeded in accumulating wealth and power, and widely diffusing their fame to an extent quite unprecedented by the countries of the old world. That she has been successful is amply proved from the fact of so few of the colonists returning to the old countries of Europe.

How very very seldom one hears of the return of emigrants from America to England : not so with our own colonists ; they go to Australia or New Zealand, not always with the object of permanently settling in the country, but with a view to fortune-making, making self the centre ; not developing the resources of the country as an adopted home for himself and sons, but as soon as the fortune is realized, quit it for ever to spend the money in England. This is one of the causes why some of our colonies creep and crawl instead of galloping after the fashion of the United States. All our colonies would do well to take a lesson from the Americans in their diffused educational system, as established in Massachusetts ; in imitating their zeal and activity in commerce, agriculture, and, above all, in colonizing ; in their love of their country, and in another feature which is eminently characteristic of an American, viz., that

while he is amassing his own fortune he is ever ready to make any sacrifice for the good of his country, ever active in developing its resources with a patriotism stanch and true. They would do well to imitate that versatility of talent which the American possesses, that quality which makes him equal to every emergency, and which, under ordinary circumstances, would require five or six distinct individuals to execute the same. Those qualifications are of an immense value in a colony. The colonies have claims upon us from the fact of their being our very best customers. Nearly everything that they require and consume are imported from the old country, thereby increasing the revenue, stimulating the merchant service, and giving additional means to the merchant to enrich himself by a colonial commerce.

And I am very sorry to bear testimony to the fact that we have English merchants who send out articles to the colonies so inferior that the people at home would refuse to purchase. I have met frequently with working men and shepherds in New Zealand who have shown me an inferior fustian used for trowsers for which they have paid double the price perhaps as in England, not half so strong as my London-made best dress trowsers. Many of the shepherds have informed me also of the badness of the leather, by stating that their shoe-bills for the year have amounted to £12, a price equal to the wages of an English servant.

An old colonist, with whom I lodged in Wellington, stated that upon one occasion she purchased a lot of sugar, which, upon using, turned out to possess one pound of solid sand for every twelve of sugar. Such is the gratitude of some

English merchants and traders for benefits conferred upon them by our colonial empire. Setting aside the many commercial advantages derived from the colonies, to what extent have they not relieved our pauperism at home, converting, in many instances, the miserable tenant of the parish union into a small landed proprietor, and in a few cases into very extensive ones. And in another point of view the colonies have been beneficial to the old country, viz., in reforming many of the abuses of that parent stock from which they were descended. Indeed it may be asserted that the United States of America, which a little more than seventy years since was part and parcel of the British Empire, has instituted social, civil, and religious reforms which have not only powerfully reacted upon England, but have produced a powerful influence upon every monarchy and empire throughout the civilized world. The same may be said of Australia and New Zealand in a minor degree, when those countries are fully developed. To illustrate the point in question:—The King of Prussia, hearing that a most valuable handicraftsman was about to sail for the United States, immediately sent for him, and asked him the cause of his leaving his native country, and giving his knowledge of his craft to a foreign power, tried to dissuade him from emigrating by making the following powerful appeal:—

“What can I do for you to induce you to remain at home?”

“Nothing,” replied the artisan, “short of making Prussia what the United States are, will induce me to remain in my native country.”

This may seem bold to tell some of the unin-

c

formed squirearchy and aristocracy of England, that many of the poor creatures who have left our shores have been a means of reforming the old country. Strange as it may appear, it is nevertheless a fact. It is one of those mysterious and wonderful workings of an overruling Providence which history will have to record. In another point of view they may be said to be beneficial to the old country ; in proportion as the poor people who go to our colonies rise in the world, in many cases, in such ratio have they a desire to improve themselves.

This altered condition of a member of a parish union cannot fail to react upon his brethren and distant relations at home, who may be supposed to be in occasional correspondence with him. This is another strange and startling fact, fully verified by the fact of Massachusetts having voted, in the year 1855, nearly as much money for educational purposes, with a population, perhaps, of not more than a million, as all England and Wales, with its many millions in the year I think, of either 1856 or 1857. I am speaking now only from memory ; but, by referring the reader to the eleventh chapter of my "Rambles in the United States," published by Hope and Co., 16 Great Marlborough-street, London, he will there find the exact figures of this very extraordinary statement.

Looking at the colonies in this light, they may be denominated, in some sense, a reformatory school, not only for those who emigrate to their shores, but also to those who stop at home. And let us not forget that it was they who provided us with gold at a time which, perhaps, saved

England from the fearful disaster of a monetary crisis—a crisis which, but for the very opportunity and timely discovery of gold in Australia, might have given her such a shock, which, if not fatal to her interests, might have required many years for her recovery.

Another very interesting feature in the colonies is that when they are well-treated they are very loyal; and when they are thoroughly good men they are very independent and industrious, requiring but few soldiers to maintain public order. That the hand of Providence is mysteriously ruling in this spirit of colonization which forms so striking a feature of our age may be readily admitted from the fact of His governorship of the universe. Is it not, then, the duty of a Christian government,—one that professes so to blend Church and State for their mutual benefit,—so to act, both ecclesiastically and politically, as to further the good cause of emigration, and by so doing relieve pauperism at home, secure friendship with the colonies, contribute to the happiness and prosperity, not only of the mother country, whilst her extensive and youthful colonial children may be equally partakers in similar blessings?

---

### GOVERNMENT RULES & REGULATIONS FOR EMIGRANTS.

FOR those who are seeking a home in the colonies, I trust that the following rules and regulations may not be found altogether without interest and advantage.

To be posted up during the voyage, in at least two conspicuous places between the passenger-decks.



ABSTRACT OF THE QUEEN'S ORDER IN COUNCIL OF  
THE 25TH OF FEBRUARY, 1856,

*For preserving order, promoting health, and securing cleanliness and ventilation on board of passenger ships, proceeding from the United Kingdom to any of Her Majesty's possessions abroad. Prepared by Her Majesty's Emigration Commissioners, in pursuance of the 61st section of the Passenger's Act, 1855, 18 and 19 Vict. cap. 119:—*

1. Every passenger to rise not later than 7 a.m., unless otherwise permitted by the surgeon, or, if no surgeon, by the master.

2. Breakfast from 8 to 9 a.m.; dinner at 1 p.m.; supper at 6 p.m.

3. The passengers to be in their beds at 10 p.m., except under permission of the surgeon, or, if no surgeon, of the master.

4. Fires to be lighted by the passengers' cook, and kept alight by him till 7 p.m., then to be extinguished, unless otherwise directed by the master, or required for the use of the sick.

5. The master to determine the order in which each passenger, or family of passengers, shall be entitled to the use of the fireplace at the proper hours.

6. On each passenger deck, at least, there are to be lit at dusk, and kept burning till daylight, three safety lamps, and such further number as shall allow one for each of the hatchways used by passengers.

7. No naked lights between decks, or in the hold, to be allowed at any time or on any account.

8. The passengers, when dressed, to roll up their beds, to sweep the deck (including the space

under the bottom of the berths), and to throw the dust overboard. Breakfast not to commence until this is done. After breakfast the deck to be dry holystoned or scraped.

9. The decks to be swept again and the dirt thrown overboard after each meal.

10. The sweepers for the day to be taken in rotation from the males above fourteen, in the proportion of five for every 100 passengers.

11. Duties of the sweepers to be to clean hospitals and roundhouse, to sweep the decks after every meal, and to dry holystone and scrape them after breakfast.

12. But the occupant of each berth is to see that his own berth is well brushed out; and single women are to keep their own compartment clean in ships where a separate compartment is allowed to them.

13. Weather permitting, the beds to be well shaken and aired on deck, and the bottom boards, if not fixtures, to be removed and dry-scrubbed, and taken on deck at least twice a week.

14. Two days in the week to be appointed by the master as washing days, but no clothes on any account to be dried between decks.

15. The coppers and cooking vessels to be cleaned every day, and the cisterns kept filled with water.

16. Scuttles and sternposts, if any, to be kept open (weather permitting) from 7 a.m. to 10 a.m., and the hatches at all hours.

17. On Sunday the passengers to be mustered at 10 a.m., when they will be expected to appear in clean and decent apparel. The day to be observed as religiously as circumstances will admit

18. No spirits or gunpowder to be taken on board by any passenger. Any that may be discovered, to be taken into the custody of the master till the expiration of the voyage.

19. No loose hay or straw to be allowed below.

20. No smoking to be allowed between decks.

21. All gambling, fighting, riotous, disorderly, and quarrelsome conduct, swearing, and violent, or indecent language, are strictly prohibited. Fire-arms, swords, and other offensive weapons, as soon as the passengers embark, to be placed in the custody of the master. No sailors to remain on the passenger deck, among the passengers, except on duty. No passenger to go to the ship's cook-house without special permission from the master, nor to remain in the fore-castle among the sailors on any account.

---

## ADDITIONAL REGULATIONS

TO BE OBSERVED ON BOARD EMIGRANT SHIPS SAILING UNDER THE SUPERINTENDENCE OF THE EMIGRATION COMMISSIONERS.

1. The emigrants are to be divided into messes.

2. Every mess is to have a head man, to be responsible for the order and regularity of it, and whose duty it will be to report to the surgeon any misconduct or neglect requiring correction.

3. The surgeon-superintendent will appoint from among the emigrants a sufficient number of constables for the enforcement of the regulations, and of cleanliness and good order, and one constable for the special purpose of looking after and

keeping in order the waterclosets and privies, who will, if his duties be satisfactorily performed, receive at the end of the voyage a larger gratuity than the ordinary constables.

4. The constables will attend daily at the serving out of the provisions, to see that each mess receives its proper allowance, and that justice is done; and a scale of the victualling will be fixed in some conspicuous part of the ship, for the information of all concerned.

5. The surgeon-superintendent is to appoint one man, if he think proper, to be his assistant in the hospital, or generally in attendance on the sick.

6. One or more women, as may be necessary, will be taken in rotation to attend any sick in the female hospital.

7. If there be no religious instruction on board, or schoolmaster appointed by the Commissioners, the surgeon-superintendent will select a person to act as teacher to the children.

8. One man may be taken, in rotation, if necessary, to act as the cook's assistant.

9. The teacher and the constables are to be exempt from the duty of cleansing decks amongst the messes, or from taking their turn in the party of general cleaners and sweepers; the man acting as cook's assistant for the day, if there be any, and the hospital man, will also be exempt from those duties.

10. On every Thursday there shall be a muster of the emigrants in clean linen and decent apparel.

11. Weather permitting, all the children are to be sent on deck immediately after breakfast,

to be inspected as to their cleanliness by the surgeon, religious instructor, or the teacher.

12. School-hours are to be fixed by the religious instructor or schoolmaster, subject to the approval of the surgeon-superintendent, or, if there be no religious instructor, by the surgeon himself.

13. Divine Service is to be performed at least once on every Sunday.

14. The married men, in rotation, will keep a watch in their part of the 'tween decks during the night. There should be two or three in each watch, and the night should be divided into three watches—the first from 8 P.M. to midnight, the second from midnight to 4 o'clock, and the morning watch from 4 to 7 A.M. The business of the watch will be to prevent irregularities; to assist any person taken ill; to attend the hatchways, deck ventilators and scuttles, seeing that they are open and shut, according to the weather and the surgeon's directions; and to make any representation that may be necessary to the surgeon-superintendent.

15. The heavy luggage is to be put in the hold. The emigrants will have access to their boxes at intervals of three or four weeks, as the surgeon-superintendent may direct.

16. All questions that may arise on the preceding regulations are to be decided conclusively by the authority of the surgeon-superintendent, who is entirely responsible for the care and good management of the emigrants, and whose authority is to be respected in all cases accordingly.

17. The surgeon-superintendent is enjoined to refuse the extra comforts, when in course of

issue, and to deny any other indulgence he may think proper, to any persons who wilfully neglect or obstruct the established rules ; and in case of gross misconduct or insubordination, he will report it to the Governor on arrival, with the name of the offender, in order that any penalties which may have been incurred under the Passenger Act may be duly enforced.

The preceding regulations, in connection with those prescribed by the order in council, will, the Commissioners believe, if properly attended to, be found sufficient to ensure good order, cleanliness, and comfort during the voyage ; but if they be neglected, the health, comfort, and future prosperity of the emigrants must be injured. Unless cleanliness and ventilation be attended to, the emigrants cannot be preserved in health ; unless regularity and harmony be maintained, their comfort cannot be ensured. And the Commissioners desire to impress upon the emigrants, that on the report which the surgeon-superintendent may make of the state of their health, and of their conduct on board, must depend very much their success in finding employment in the colony.

By order of the Board,

STEPHEN WALCOTT, *Secretary.*

GOVERNMENT EMIGRATION OFFICE,

8, PARK-STREET, WESTMINSTER.

---

DIETARY SCALE FOR EMIGRANT SHIPS SAILING UNDER  
GOVERNMENT SUPERINTENDENCE.

The scale on the following page is for persons of twelve years of age and upwards. Children of one year and under twelve years of age, one-half

## A GALLOP TO THE ANTIPODES.

	ANIMAL FOOD.						BREADSTUFFS.				PRESERVED VEGETABLES.				GROCERIES.					Weekly.	
	Beef.	Pork.	Preserved meats.	Suet.	Butter.	Biscuit.	Flour.	Oatmeal.	Pears.	Rice.	Potatoes.	Carrots, Turnips, Celery, and Mint.	Cabbage.	Raisins.	Tea.	Coffee, weight when roasted.	Sugar.	Treacle.	Water.		
Sunday.....	—	8	—	3	—	6	8	—	$\frac{1}{4}$	—	—	1	—	3	$\frac{1}{4}$	—	—	2	3		
Monday.....	—	—	8	2	—	6	8	4	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	$\frac{1}{2}$	4	2	3		
Tuesday.....	6	—	—	—	—	6	8	—	4	4	—	—	1	—	—	$\frac{1}{4}$	—	—	3		
Wednesday...	—	8	—	2	—	6	8	4	$\frac{1}{4}$	—	—	—	—	3	—	$\frac{1}{4}$	4	2	3		
Thursday....	8	—	—	—	2	6	8	—	—	4	—	—	1	—	—	$\frac{1}{4}$	—	—	3		
Friday .....	—	—	8	2	—	6	8	8	—	—	—	—	—	—	1	1	4	2	3		
Saturday ....	6	—	—	—	—	6	8	—	$\frac{1}{4}$	4	—	—	—	—	—	$\frac{1}{4}$	—	—	3		
																				Mixed pickles	
																				Mustard.	
																				Lime-juice.	
																				Salt.	
																				{ Pepper, Ground.	

of such rations. All the issues are to continue on the same days as specified in the scale.

---

#### YOUNG CHILDREN'S SCALE.

Children between one and four years of age are to receive preserved meats instead of salt meat every day, also a quarter of a pint of preserved milk, and every alternate day one egg.

Children under one year old are to be allowed three pints of water daily, and if above four months old, a quarter of a pint of milk daily; also three ounces of preserved soup and one egg every alternate day; 12 oz. biscuit, 4 oz. of oatmeal, 8 oz. of flour, 4 oz. of rice, and 10 oz. of sugar daily.

To infants under four months old, the surgeon may issue such nutriment as he may in any case think necessary; while in any port of the United Kingdom, or in any port into which the vessel may put before completing the voyage. and for one or two days after sailing, if practicable, two-thirds of a pound of fresh meat, one pound and a half of soft bread, and one pound of potatoes per statute adult, are to be issued daily with a suitable supply of vegetables, in lieu of all other rations, except tea, coffee, sugar, and butter.

By order of Her Majesty's Emigration Commissioners,

S. WALCOTT, *Secretary.*

GOVERNMENT EMIGRATION OFFICE,  
PARK STREET, WESTMINSTER,  
Sept. 1856.



## CHAPTER III.

## VOYAGE TO MELBOURNE.

It is not my intention to take the reader through the tedium and monotony of sea-life, in all its dull routine of navigation and seamanship, as it daily occurs on board ship; but simply to sketch, as briefly as possible, a few of the most startling incidents of the voyage from Plymouth to Melbourne.

The steam clipper ship "Undaunted," an entirely new vessel, and built by the Screw Clipper Company expressly for the Australian trade, is of the size of a frigate, with a propelling steam power, when in full force in certain weathers, about equal to six knots an hour. In a succession of calms, a state of things not at all unusual in tropical latitudes, this small propelling power is of incalculable benefit to shippers of goods as well as to passengers, the screw enabling the vessel to move steadily onward towards the destined port, despite of calms, light, or even adverse winds, and thereby shortening the voyage by many miles; a circumstance of vital importance to a traveller who is anxious to see the world in the present improved and enlightened age, when every newly-constructed apparatus, ship, or article, is an improvement upon the old one.

The "Undaunted" possessed some modern peculiarities in her construction which would surprise some of the old school of commanders—those good, old, primitive, well-meaning men, who belong to a distinct and ancient period, and have but little connection with the modern world. Her Majesty's Government could not do better than cause some portion of the ships composing the present merchant service of this country to be broken up, and present the old gentlemen with pensions for life, and thereby get rid of some of the most powerful obstructionists and impediments to the enlightenment and development of the present rapidly advancing period in which we live. Speaking of the good old ships of bygone days, sailors of the modern school generally characterize them as *bona fide* moving haystacks, models of which should be placed in the British Museum, as curiosities for the wonder-seekers to gaze at, and as the example of what ought to be avoided in modern shipbuilding.

By good judges the "Undaunted" is considered quite a model, especially in her hull. Her yards are enormous (too large, according to the opinion of some of the old school, for practical purposes); her spread of canvass is unusually wide, dangerously so, especially her studding-sails. She has adopted Cunningham's patent for reefing, as well as the patent log, which is so constructed as to accurately mark the progress made in a given time. By her steam power she can condense in one day a sufficiency of fresh water to supply the ship for a month.

We had scarcely quitted our anchorage in Plymouth Sound, on the evening of the 5th of

June, 1857, when we were afforded the best of all proofs of the great advantage of steam—a dead calm. As the delightful hills of Devon faded one after another from our view, I could not help muttering, I may have feasted my eye on them for the last time. But fairly away from the land, the thoughts of the traveller are withdrawn in a great measure from home, sweet home! and naturally turn to the ship, its crew, and whatever belongs to it.

As we steamed out of Plymouth Sound, the greater portion of the spinsters were on deck—some of them promenading the poop, others squatted on the main and quarter decks; some engaged in works of industry, and others moving that little member, which no man can tame, with amazing spirit; some were ogling the sailors, and others frolicking when the opportunity served, and the surgeon-superintendent was out of the way. Permission to walk the poop was exclusively given to the single women.

Knowing something of Australia, and desirous to give some of the emigrants who were about to settle there for life a little information respecting the country, and advice how to proceed, I applied to the surgeon for permission, but met with a decided negative. So strict was the discipline maintained by my medical friend, that though there were in all upwards of five hundred on board, frequently have I paced the quarterdeck at midnight, all around me having quite as solitary an aspect as an American prairie or African desert.

On sighting Madeira, we began to look out for the trade-winds. Those who have never visited the latitude of the trade-winds would do well to

do so before they die—if anxious to see nature as she exhibits herself at sea in her most charming costume.

The fine balmy breeze that constantly blows in one direction (not scented with influenza, rheumatism, or catarrh)—the fine temperature that prevails, inflicting neither weariness nor lassitude, but gently stimulating the body as well as the intellectual faculties—contribute to throw a genial glow over the body and soul, which can only be enjoyed in these paradisaical regions of the globe. From the wind blowing constantly in one direction, there is no shouting and noisy step of the strong-toned and open-throated sailor, no shifting of canvass, no wafting and shaking of the shrouds, no howling of the wind, no beating of the sails, yet they are filled to perfect inflation like a full-blown flower. All seems quiet and still, and nature would appear to be enjoying a nap: it is not so, it is only a happy delusion. Look, reader, over her stern and you will find her ploughing through old Neptune's territories at the rate of ten knots an hour. It is here that the ship assumes that stateliness and gracefulness which makes her appear like a thing of life. Her great studding-sails spread out, literally inflated like a corolla, appear like wings appended to her side, and give her the air of a colossal insect gracefully and gently skimming the water. Her hull might pass for the body and her masts for the vertebral column, clothed to the top in well-blanch'd and well inflated canvass, without a wrinkle on its surface; and don't forget to look at her hull immersed in that purple water of the ocean, fringed at the top with ripples consisting of

sparkling and lustrous foam, white as the snow, dancing and rejoicing in the breeze, while her topmast is bathed in ether blue above, gracefully curtseying like a terpsichorean nymph, as she acknowledges her allegiance to the universal dominion of mighty Neptune. A ship looks finer and smarter in those latitudes than in any other. She has left off her working suit (although, as already stated, not the least inclined to be lazy) to put on her Sunday best. Her linen has been washed by the dew, bleached by the sun, and starched and ironed by the fan-like breezes that steadily blow over these wonderful regions. She stands alone in the world of beauty, like the traveller in the desert. She is comparable to nothing else in the world besides, because there is nothing in the world of art more beautiful than herself when moving in her native element. When sailing, she seems to be the connecting link between the firmament and the waters, the point of union between earth and heaven, for her masts seem to pierce the very sky, while her hull is gracefully ploughing the main. In the dock she is crippled, in the river she is asleep, on the ocean she is rocked and perfectly awake, but in the trades she is in her element, a proud monument of art alone in the wide world, surrounded by the glorious works of nature. "All nature is but art unknown to thee." Is she not emblematic of man in his voyage through the wide waters in her immediate connection with heaven and earth?—and what a perfect specimen of art she is to be in perfect keeping and harmony with those glorious scenes of tropical latitudes. Art is never so fine as when it will bear the inspection of the critical eye in

these wonderful regions, where every imperfection and wrinkle, and want of symmetry, have to stand in the centre of a world of perfection, lit up by the glorious rays of the sun, bounded by the brilliant heavens above, and below by the sparkling and dancing waves of the ocean. But while speaking of the ship and the ocean, let us not forget to take a glimpse at the majestic heavens. It is in these latitudes that nature is dressed not only in her best, but at the same time in her most varied costume. And many of her charms will be lost upon the careless traveller who is not sensitively alive to her beauties, and who does not watch her constantly as she gradually shifts from one scene to another. To be a good observer he must be constant, otherwise he will see only a part instead of the whole. It is not under the meridian splendour of a tropical sun at noon that these beauties are most striking, although at that time they are often incomparably grand. The traveller must be up at sunrise, and forget not to glance at the evening sunset. The clouds possess a form which, I think, is quite peculiar to these latitudes, which might be designated the clouds of extra and inter-tropical regions. They must be seen to be recognised, as no pen-painting can equal the reality of the scene.

Some faint idea, however, may be formed of certain phases, which I will in vain attempt to describe. At midday it may happen, as I have seen it once or twice, that the earth and sky have a oneness of complexion; so much so, that the boundary-line of the horizon shows no line of demarcation. This would be a most favourable starting-point for the student. This sky is a

D

feature of the English coast scenery at times ; I have often remarked it. I am inclined to think it is the great exception in tropical latitudes. In the evening of the same day, in a few hours after, the sky becomes all of a sudden beautifully blue ; the water that of a purple tint. The boundary-line of the horizon is now as distinctly marked, dividing the ocean from the sky as the land bears its distinctive feature from that of the sea. When this occurs in a marked manner, it is the usual precursor of a magnificent sunset. As the sun goes down you see some of the clouds that were a few moments before white as wool become suddenly tinted on one side with a brown metallic lustre, while others are one mass of burning liquid gold. In another part of the heavens you will see the clouds tipped and gilded only at their summits with something approaching to electrical scintillations, while others are beginning to put on a scarlet costume, associated with others that are robed in a vivid and wondrous and complete blaze of scarlet light, with the heavens blushing all around in different tints of the same colour. At another time the sky, instead of possessing its usual blue, assumes a most beautiful flush of amber light at the horizon, while the higher parts have assumed the colour of a chrysoprase, or apple-green, or pea-green, with the mighty mass of waters rolling underneath, purple as a globular mass of liquid sapphire, whose edge is distinctly marked as it approaches the amber light. At other times I have seen the setting sun produce clouds of the most beautiful violet tint. Upon one occasion I observed the sky neither blue nor green, but possessed of a

dark purple, precisely similar to that of the ocean. At other times I have seen the sky exquisitely green, enveloping clouds of the fairest and most delicate ermine, with the sea beneath like a rolling liquid sapphire, with its sparkling and lustrous foam-crested wave dancing in the breeze, looking like liquid alabaster. It is not only the wonderful and gorgeous display of colours that characterize the tropical sunset, there exists besides a peculiarity of form belonging to the clouds which cannot fail to catch the attention of the observer. We will suppose that the clouds, by way of example, are just as you see them in England, which is the case at times. The sun is setting, and the attention of the most careless observer is suddenly drawn to the great point of attraction—the clouds. You are much struck with the great variety presented to the eye, and you immediately begin with your own system of classification. Quite low down, and at the horizon, you see a series of detached hills or mountains; a little further to the right you are quite sure that you descry a sea-shore, with cliffs of a moderate height, on which you see trees of a certain kind and growth. In another direction you look upon ordinary clouds, possessed of some little peculiarity which you cannot very well describe, and, your curiosity being excited, you watch them, when suddenly you perceive that a process of transformation is going on. And now it is that your ordinary ones are converted into the most extraordinary. One cloud is now metamorphosed into a series—as if by a process of conjuration or magical generation, has produced an offspring of trees, animals, birds, fishes, and every



other imaginable kind of thing. At times they seem to suddenly split up, as if exploded by electricity, or gunpowder, into every possible shape and form. The detached mountains that you saw some time since have now become changed into a flat district, slightly undulating, when you may discover farms, mansions, fields, wood and water, and every other kind of element to form the perfect landscape. The sea-coast which we briefly noticed, is now displaying to your astonished faculties a series of beautiful caves in the steep cliffs which form the coast line, with churches in another direction, interspersed with something like windmills. In the caves you may frequently behold the setting sun lighting it up, and acting the part of cicerone. Even ships may be seen sailing to and fro, under the magical transforming influence of this setting sun of the tropics. It is in these wonderful scenes of the great terraqueous globe, that the philosopher whose heart has been softened and tutored under the benign influences of Christianity, can, with the Christian poet Milton, exclaim,—

“ These are thy glorious works, Parent of Good ;  
Thine this universal frame ; that sitt’st above  
These heavens—to us invisible, or dimly seen ; yet these  
Declare—declare thy goodness beyond thought—  
Thy power divine.”

Or feel as the great Jonathan Edwards did upon similar occasions, when surveying the wonderful works of creation. “ The appearance of everything,” says he, in speaking of the influence produced on his mind by the clearer views which he had obtained of the work of Christ, “ the appear-

ance of everything was altered. There seemed to be, as it were, a calm, sweet cast or appearance of divine glory almost in everything. God's excellency, his wisdom, his purity and love, seemed to appear in everything; in the sun, moon, stars; in the clouds and blue sky; in the grass, flowers, and trees; in the water, and all nature, which used greatly to fix my mind. I often used to sit and view the moon for a long time, and in the day spent much time in viewing the clouds and sky, to behold the sweet glory of God in these things, in the mean time, singing forth, with a low voice, my contemplations of the Creator and Redeemer.

“ He looks abroad into the varied field  
Of nature, and, though poor, perhaps, compared  
With those whose mansions glitter in his sight,  
Calls the delightful scenery all his own.  
His are the mountains, and the valleys his,  
And the resplendent rivers. His to enjoy  
With a propriety that none can feel  
But who, with filial confidence inspired,  
Can lift to heaven an unpresumptuous eye,  
And, smiling, say, my Father made them all.”

After leaving the north-east trades in the northern hemisphere, the next most remarkable portion of the ocean is the latitude of tropical calms lying between the two trade-winds. I have already briefly mentioned this part of the voyage in a manner perhaps sufficiently clear to enable the traveller in some degree to picture to himself what he may anticipate in those latitudes. When we arrived at this equatorial gap, which sometimes occupies, under canvass, an average passage perhaps of eight or nine days, we up steam and glided through it in a comparatively

short time. It is here that the naturalist will find the Portuguese man-of-war gracefully scudding before the wind like a miniature vessel under canvass. It is the latitude also of the shark and the many-coloured dolphin, as well as of shoals of flying fish. We were very fortunate in falling in with the south-east trades in the latitude  $5^{\circ}$  north. Our north-east trades were extremely light and only lasted for a very short period. The theory of these extraordinary winds, which constantly blow in one direction from year to year, is as follows:—The air, at the equator, becomes rarefied by the excessive and constant action of solar heat, and ascends into the higher region of the atmosphere, thereby creating a vacuum, when a current of cold air from the north and south poles rushes in to fill up the vacuum. I think I have read that, 150 years ago, these trade-winds were completely unknown to navigators.

The traveller who, for the first time, makes the voyage to Australia at the same season of the year as that in which I started, cannot fail to be struck with the remarkable fact that he will approach the equator in a few days after the summer solstice of the northern hemisphere, and in a very short time after, he finds himself in the middle of winter, surrounded with hail and snow-storms, fearful gales of wind, frosty weather, and all the characteristics of winter in the southern hemisphere.

On the 28th of June we crossed the equator. The day after, by way of variety, we were entertained by some trials. It could hardly be expected that five hundred souls pent up in one

ship, during a voyage to the Antipodes, composed of groups of mortality presenting great variety in their characters, stations, and education, should pull unanimously and completely together. There were frequently little irregularities which called for the vigilant eye and strong hand of the captain to check in the bud, ere they ripened into serious violations of rule and duty. On the 29th of June, the day after crossing the line, some men were tried before the surgeon, superintendent, and captain, for dereliction of duty. Certain emigrants objected to clean, wash, and holystone the opposite side of the deck, believing that, after having performed those operations on their own side, they were not liable, according to the regulations, to execute the same for another party. The case was decided against them. The same day some of the sailors were tried and, I believe, found guilty of egg-stealing. Some time after this, an Irish girl, named Mary M——y, was brought before the captain, being charged with striking a Scotch girl for asserting that Scotch whisky far surpassed the Irish. This was considered by Mary a most unwarrantable attack upon the honour and glory of old Ireland, and she resented it accordingly by at once knocking the girl down, and dealing to her a very heavy and serious blow on the head. Mary was heavy-handed, heavy-heeled, united to a figure anything but symmetrical. It was, nevertheless, remarkable for massive weight rather than elegance of form. Her temper was as obstinate and as passionate as could possibly belong to an Irish girl of her own standing. Her mental qualities were somewhat pig-headed, which, when united to her strong

figure and heavy fists, made her an awkward customer to deal with. When politely requested to come before the captain to answer the charge preferred against her, she refused, upon which the constable seized her, when she immediately showed fight. Others were called in to assist in finally dragging her to her trial, when she threatened the whole of them, and, I believe, she made some abrasions of the skin and sundry bruises upon half a dozen of the constables. The captain found her guilty of the charge preferred against her, and severely reprimanded her for her unwomanly conduct, not only in knocking a female down, but, at the same time, for attacking, frightening, scratching, bruising, and pinching half a dozen of Her Majesty's most renowned constables on board the ship *Undaunted*. Mary took the reprimand not in that bland and quiet way, or with that *suaviter in modo* which others might have done. Her very blood seemed to boil—her steam was up—she burnt with rage from head to foot, and, I believe, if she had had a sufficiency of gunpowder appended to either her head or her heels, that her fiery temperament would have ignited them, and would have willingly sacrificed herself in an act of explosion; and, I believe, that she would have annihilated all the constables, the girl, and the captain. The captain watched his opportunity, and addressed her just after one of her violent paroxysms of rage as follows:—"Mary M—y, you have struck one of your own sex—you have attacked half a dozen of Her Majesty's constabulary force, I shall stand no nonsense with you, I shall deal with you in a way that will surprise you, and in

a manner quite suitable to your unwomanly conduct; I shall treat you like a man by putting you in irons if you show me any of your abominable and unwarrantable conduct." After this, Mary M——y quieted down and the trial ended.

On July 6th we passed out of the southern tropic. At this time it became necessary to change the linen costume for that of cloth. There are certain birds, as stormy petrels, boobies, cape pigeons, molly-maulks, or molly-hawks—I know not which, as well as the albatross—the largest of the winged tribe, to be met with during this voyage. These birds belong to certain zones or latitudes. We fell in with the first Cape pigeon on July 8, latitude S.  $28\frac{1}{2}$ , longitude W. 34. I have found these birds,\* from the part just mentioned, ranging from latitude 42 and higher all the way to Australia and New Zealand, being a distance of 7,000 miles. These poor unfortunate birds constantly follow the ship, and approach it frequently so near that an Australian bullock-driver would fetch it down with his whip. This induces every cockney sportsman who happens to go to Australia to try his skill at marine pigeon shooting. These poor creatures get mutilated and wounded—not killed—so very frequently, that it would be an act of great humanity to enforce the Act of Parliament against cruelty to animals. On the 19th of July there was a most magnificent sunset in latitude  $41\frac{1}{2}$  W., longitude 6. It is described as one quite different to what we have seen in tropical latitudes, by being composed of clouds resembling silver and snow. On the 23rd of July, the day before arriving at the Cape of Good Hope, we had weather of a most unusual

\* Cape pigeons.

kind, but, nevertheless, most agreeable for that stormy region; it consisted of a light breeze, accompanied with a beautiful sky far more resembling the delightful regions of tropical latitudes.

The next day we passed the Cape, in a smart gale of wind, which came on suddenly, just to let us know, as the sailor would express it, where we were.

On the evening of that day I was conversing on the poop with the third mate, then on watch, when I suddenly perceived lightning from the north-west, a sure precursor of an awful Cape squall, most likely followed by a hard gale of wind, which has sent many a ship to the bottom of the ocean. I said to the third mate, "Did you see that lightning?" to which he answered in the affirmative, and immediately went down and informed the captain, who very quickly made his appearance on deck.

A dark black cloud rapidly advanced towards us, underneath which the sky was as clear and serene as the sunset of the tropics, while the lightning was playing fearfully on the margin of the black cloud at the time when all was serene and cloudless, presenting a scene of uncommon splendour and sublimity. It was a fearful sight, not so much from the appearance of the thing as from what was likely to follow, having at the time an unusual press of canvass exposed. The captain that very morning had been relating to me the fact of his having once been in a gale of wind, during which he had to get into one of the boats suspended by the side of the ship, in which he had a very narrow escape from being blown overboard. At the time that this fearful north-west squall or gale was about to burst upon us,

I thought of the captain and his narrow escape, and deeming it possible that some such burster was about to approach us, I took the precaution of laying hold of the companion with a very firm and determined grasp, and then resolved to see the end of it, whatever might be the consequence.

The captain, as I said before, was on deck, and fully apprized of what was about to occur. Keeping hold of the companion, I watched with intense interest the fearful-looking black cloud with the lightning playing underneath it, having my eye at the same time upon the captain, the third mate, the helmsman, and observing everything that was going on. At last it arrived; and, although we were scudding, it nearly lifted the captain over the locker, as he stood at one end of the poop. I shall never forget it. I stood my ground, to render assistance, should anything of an alarming nature happen.

In a few moments after the squall struck us the captain immediately ordered the lower studding-sail to be taken in. While this was about to be performed, the helmsman sung out in an anxious and loud tone, "Captain, the helm does not answer. She is broaching to."

At this critical moment, when the next might have been fatal to every soul on board, the captain in the most alert and dexterous manner seized the mizen topsail halyards and let go the sail, and before you could say Jack Robinson laid hold of the helm, and saved the ship Undaunted from having the sticks (*alias* masts) blown out of her. The third mate, who was busily engaged in calling up the watch, and shouting the sailors to their duty, told them in plain language not to be mis-



taken, that if they did not move a little quicker the masts would go by the board. Strange to say that this statement had not the slightest effect upon the indolent crew—though the lives of all on board depended upon their alacrity,—who lazily went about their work as if the most ordinary business had only to be performed. Such is the British sailor in the enlightened nineteenth century. Whether he is better or worse than he was in the days of our forefathers I know not. He is far from being the simple-minded, honest, open-hearted, hard-working man I pictured to myself before I became acquainted with his true character. Our captain was one of the modern school, a strict disciplinarian, and a very well-bred man, and, as might naturally be expected, he possessed a deep-rooted antipathy to the ill-bred, ignorant, and stand-still obstructionist character of the old school. Having travelled nearly all the world over, he was very intelligent and well informed, and consequently a most agreeable person. He was reckoned an excellent as well as an able commander. Like many who have gone before him, he was not a little vain of his seafaring knowledge. A short time after we left Plymouth he remarked, with some little pomposity,—

“When you see this ship with double-reefed topsails it will be blowing. You will never see her hove to, and not often under close-reefed topsails.”

Captain Franklyn was employed in the transport service in the Crimea, and unfortunately caught in the well-known gale at Balaklava, which destroyed so many ships and committed such fearful devastation. We had a splendid passage from the Cape to Australia from falling in with strong

winds. We had six gales of wind between these extreme points, in two of which the ship *Undaunted* was running before them under close-reefed top-sails, a thing I did not expect to see. We advanced to latitude 45 S. where we found ourselves in the middle of frost and snow, terrific gales of wind, Scotch mists as thick as hang over any part of Auld Reekie, a most unpleasant circumstance, as we were then in the neighbourhood of icebergs. When in this latitude I went on deck one morning before breakfast, looked round me, and observed two men at the helm, a thing unusual. Glancing right and left, I observed the literally moving mountains of water, covered at their apices with that froth and foam which is the characteristic of blowing hard, split into minute particles by the force of the wind, and carried into the air like the dust of the desert. Joined to this was a sky dark, lowering, and revengeful—a sky that seemed to depict the anger of the great Governor of the universe. If the word sublimity has a meaning and an application, the storm at sea gives its full and unmistakable signification. After watching the many furious mountain waves that marched up to our stern with that boldness and swiftness each told us in no small mutterings of the voice, no *sotte voce* of articulate sound, but with loud and long-continued hammerings as well as thunderings, “if you don’t get out of the way I’ll poop you.” After looking at this most sublime of all earthly sights I was convinced that, taking it altogether, it was perhaps the hardest gale I had ever witnessed at sea. Coming across the first mate, I said, “Did you ever see it blow harder than at

present?" He replied, "This is the hardest gale I ever saw at sea." On going down to breakfast, however, with good appetite, I found the good ship Undaunted at her cuddy table, steady and stable, so much so that I marvelled at her, and promised her for the future a certificate of good behaviour. The first mate, a young man, anxious for nautical information, then put the query to the captain, "Do you think, sir, that it blew harder at the great gale of Balaklava than it does now?" and received for answer, "It did." Prior to this all our logs were broken, even the patent one, by the rapid sailing of the vessel when taking them in: our speed, according to the best judges, being at times during this hard gale between seventeen and eighteen knots an hour. Being now in the neighbourhood of icebergs, and sailing, or rather galloping through the ocean at little railroad speed in misty weather with these disagreeable and frosty-faced southern travellers for companions, we were constantly on the lookout for them night and day by placing two of the most lynx-eyed mariners upon the forecastle. We were assured of their presence by the sudden fall of the thermometer, and the decrease in the temperature of the water of the ocean. Let the reader ponder for a moment on an act of collision of this kind, while sailing at the rate of seventeen knots. During some portion of the time that we were threatened with icebergs we were most fortunately favoured with a bit of a moon. One morning, however, the second mate descried, just after the moon had disappeared, a dark-looking object of ill-defined and indescribable dimensions, which, connecting the circumstance of a diminu-

tion of the temperature of both air and water, induced the mate to conclude that he had seen an iceberg, at a distance of about half a mile. On the 11th of August we were in the same meridian of longitude as Cape Leewin, the most westerly part of the continent of Australia, not far from King George's Sound—a point within a few hundred miles of the town of Perth, the capital of Western Australia, or the old Swan River settlement, as it used to be called.

Standing one morning on the quarter-deck, in front of the poop, and observing the surgeon and the superintendent, and the captain, with a group of others congregated in front of the emigrants' cook's galley, I, suspecting from their lengthened visages that something serious had occurred, asked the doctor what was the matter, who smartly replied, "The ship is on fire." Had this alarming occurrence, caused by the cooking apparatus in the emigrants' galley becoming too hot and setting fire to the deck, happened during the night instead of the day, which it very fortunately did, the ship Undaunted might have been burnt to the water's edge, and all hands lost. On the evening of the 17th of August, a midshipman stationed in the rigging exclaimed, in a lusty voice, "Land ahead." An announcement which some received as one of the ordinary movements on board ship; others began to chat about it, making themselves very busy upon the occasion; their chatting being somewhat similar to the cackling of as many old hens that have quickly pounced upon a large potato, or an ear of corn which had been buried in the soil, suddenly coming to light. One of the emigrants on hearing the

intelligence immediately fainted. This reminded me some years ago of going to America in company with Mr. Charles Kean and lady, when the latter, hearing that land was visible, went on deck, and quickly returned in a high state of excitement, considerably above the fainting temperature, exclaiming, in loud and musical intonations, accompanied with appropriate gesticulation, most theatrically enunciated, "Land! land! Oh! glorious land!" We remained quite near to the land during the night, and next morning found ourselves within six or seven miles of the coast, off Portland Bay, sixty or seventy miles to the north of Cape Otway. The coast here was bold, and hilly in the background. The hills were covered with magnificent specimens of timber, and crowded together upon their summits, forming a most picturesque feature of the coast. Some of the finest sheep and cattle stations are found beyond these hills, in a country for rich soil and picturesqueness perhaps not to be surpassed in the whole range of the Australian continent. The newly-discovered diggings of Ararat lie within five miles of these hills. Occasional hills of sand were visible quite near to the sea-coast, arid, dry, herbless, treeless as an African desert. On approaching Cape Otway, the coast-line consisted of steep white cliffs of a moderate height, not dissimilar to those found at the Reculvers on the coast of Kent, with hills still in the background, less wooded, with a mountain peak, not far distant from the Cape. From Cape Otway, the land in the foreground is scrubby, with slopes and gullies, after which the coast is heavily

timbered for a short distance. Here night came on with an unfavourable wind, which rendered it dangerous to enter the harbour of Melbourne. If we had arrived an hour sooner we could have reached Melbourne that evening, instead of which we had to steam all night parallel to the coast, keeping the lights at the heads well in view. The next morning, when within about twenty miles of the heads, the high and bold coast had dwindled down to a flat district, with hills at a considerable distance in the background. The country at that part was not dissimilar, in many respects, to the mouth of the Humber, with a headland precisely similar to the well-known clay cliffs at Cleethorpe, on the Lincolnshire coast.

The harbour of Melbourne is called Hobson's Bay, which may with very great truth be termed a little sea. Melbourne is forty miles from the heads. The right entrance of the harbour strikingly resembled, in its geological formation, the sand-hills on the Lincolnshire coast, being composed entirely of sand — in some instances not covered with any kind of vegetable matter whatever. To the left the country was heavily timbered. A day or two before landing, the captain had ordered a little extra work to the men, which gave great offence to the boatswain's mate, who, being considerably impertinent upon the occasion, got dismissed from his post, or, as it is more nautically termed, "broke." This circumstance gave great offence to some of the crew, who, being drunk, approached the quarterdeck very near to the poop, talking loudly and disorderly. One man was

E

spoken sharply to by the chief officer, who told him to hold his noise, and walk off. He still persisted in making his noisy remarks, upon which the first mate walked down to him, and asked him what he meant by such marked rudeness and impertinence. The captain instantly ordered him upon the poop, where he was dragged by two of the officers. He became insolent beyond all bearing, when the captain collared him, ordered him to be put in irons, and placed in Screw-alley,\* and to be kept upon bread and water, until we arrived in Melbourne, where he was to take his trial. At the moment that the irons were about to be placed upon the man, another person most audaciously ascended the poop, to rescue his fellow-sailor, whereupon he was instantly collared by the captain, who was in a fearful rage. The fellow declared the captain would choke him, and begged to be set at liberty to take his revenge. Soon after this, a third, quite a youth, made his appearance. The movement now assumed somewhat of a mutinous character; upon which the captain instantly ran down for his sword, with which he belted the young gentleman about the *partes posteriores*, and sent him into the rigging, to remain there until we arrived in Melbourne. The captain now possessed himself of his revolver, and challenged them from the poop to come on as he was fully prepared to meet them, telling them that before they took the ship they would

\* Screw-alley is a long dark communication leading from the engine-room under the maindeck, and extending under the poop very near to the helm. I think it derived its name from the captain, when inclined to be humorous.

have to march over his dead body. Here the affair ended. The men took their trial at Melbourne. A voyage at sea may be very truly set down as a dull and monotonous affair. A writer giving a description of it may make the affair a very miserable failure, especially to the reader, who, perhaps, may fancy the description even duller than the voyage. I have tried, gentle reader, to present to your imagination scenes at sea, so arranged and in such variety as the facts of the voyage permitted. How far I have succeeded I leave it for you to decide. Here, however, permit me, before closing the narrative, to remark that, with all its imperfections, you possess advantages as reader which cannot be claimed for the writer. He has taken you to the trade-winds, and, in imagination, wafted you with its gentle breezes into distant latitudes without charging you your fare. You have been present at some of the most glorious scenes to be found in the world—the sunsets of the tropics, where people, unaccustomed to the burning heat of those regions, pass sleepless nights, are literally cooked in the various fashions of roasting, frying, frizzling, devil-ing, boiling, fricasseeing, to such a degree, as to be termed “too much done,” while you, gentle reader, have not had a single hair of your head turned by perspiration. You have been transported to the wintry gales of the southern hemisphere, among the roaring forty’s, with frost and snow, hail and storm, where the passenger, should he be of a cold temperament, requires to be wrapped in fur, while you have not experienced the slightest chill. You have been in a fearful gale of wind without being washed with a single spray of the



ocean, and present at the stirring scene at the end of the voyage, which bade fair to terminate in mutiny, had it not received a timely check, without getting wounded or shot. In another respect you have greatly the advantage, but of this more by and by. For the present, good-bye. I shall meet you next at that wonder of the modern world, the town of Melbourne.

## CHAPTER IV.

## MELBOURNE.

THE title of this book being "A Gallop to the Antipodes," those who may do the author the honour to run their eye over its pages must not be surprised should they occasionally find themselves in the society of an unskilful horseman, who, having taken a vast hunting-field for the pursuit of game, finds himself, from the unskilful manner in which the pursuit is conducted, frequently and suddenly brought to a pause. The pursuit of the fox may, as Pegasus attempts to take his fence, or unfortunately tumbles into a ditch, be suddenly changed into that of the kangaroo, or the emu, or any other of the various tribes of animals that constitute the hunting-field. But, dropping all metaphor, however unskilfully the work of the author may be executed, he trusts that in all his descriptions of his various gallops truth will be found to have been his guiding-star.

On dropping anchor off the town of Melbourne, on the 20th of August, I lost no time in bidding all on board good-bye, anxious not to lose even one opportunity of proceeding to New Zealand. Much has been said and written touching the ex-

orbitant charges of boatmen in England, but that their brethren at the antipodes are somewhat "tarred with the same stick," is evidenced by the fact, that for my trip to Saundridge, which occupied the boatmen about ten minutes, I had to pay no less than an English crown.

From Saundridge, a railroad, two miles in length, conveyed me over a tract of land—part bog, part desert, to Melbourne. Here I found the railway officials quite as ready to dip their fingers into my pocket, and extract from it that to which they had no right, as the boatmen—they having made me pay considerably more than the regular fare. For this, however, I had myself greatly to blame, having, in order to obtain from them a little information, told them, in colonial phraseology, that I was a "new chum." Take warning, therefore, emigrants, and do not be guilty of a similar folly, unless you are particularly anxious to be unmercifully fleeced; for not only at Melbourne, but in almost every part of those regions, you will find people ever ready to pluck the very coat from your back.

From the railway terminus I proceeded to the Prince of Wales Hotel, sending my luggage by a common dray, for which I had to pay three shillings, though the distance did not exceed a quarter of a mile. To many, these little matters may appear unworthy of notice, but it is hoped that they may be the means of placing not a few of those who may hereafter be induced to proceed to the antipodes on their guard against the imposition of those who have preceded them to that quarter.

The streets of Melbourne are unusually wide, and run at right angles to each other, and present much the same appearance as a common turnpike-road, no part of them being paved with boulders. True it is that a portion of each is slabbed for the accommodation of foot-passengers, but there being no drains or sewers, and the foot-path being bounded on one side by gutters, the latter during a heavy rain become rivulets—yea, rivers—and cause much annoyance and discomfort. Some of them have a most singular appearance, to drain which has been found to be almost impossible, the ground at each end being higher than any portion of the intervening space, forming a valley of the form of a crescent. The many little houses in these wide avenues have anything but a noble appearance. When I say little, I speak comparatively. The town, to speak metaphorically, has had two existences, its first life began about nineteen years ago; the second life in 1850-51. At first the houses were almost all constructed of wood, but in 1850 wood was laid aside, and a more enduring material substituted in all buildings erected since the latter period. The population, which at the former period numbered but a few thousands only, now exceeds, I believe, 100,000, thanks to the gold-finders. If California, with its capital, San Francisco, is allowed to be the first wonder of the modern world, Victoria, with her capital, Melbourne, must unquestionably rank as the second.

The shops of Melbourne are large, many of them unusually so, their fronts being all glass, and well stored with every article, from the most costly to the most common. But, although they

may dazzle with their spaciousness and their splendour, yet when viewed in connexion with their superstructure, the majority fail to rivet the attention. There are many exceptions, however, to this rule. Some are too high, but the great majority are far too low, presenting to the eye a strange mass of incongruities, without regularity, harmony, or unity.

Melbourne can boast of many large public buildings. Some of them are well designed, but at the same time exhibiting bad specimens of stonemasonry, of which the University is a striking instance of the latter, the Bank of Australia of the former. Taking it altogether, the Bank of Australia is perhaps the finest building in the town. Another, opposite to it, is an instance of shocking design, with the most tawdry and profuse and vulgar ornamentation. Its great value consists in showing what ought to be avoided in symmetrical and harmonious construction. It stands out a great object of mark, the very antipodes and antithesis of the Bank of Australia. The architect and builder of the Bank of Australia are much indebted to this tasteless building for bringing out their own architectural skill and taste in alto-relievo. Taken as a whole, the town of Melbourne, constructed in the middle of the nineteenth century, when the last thing is usually the best, if it stood within sight of any of the metropolitan cities of Europe, would be considered a most miserable failure. When we consider that the frequently uneducated gold-digger and uninstructed emigrant have mainly contributed to its formation, it then becomes a marvellous town. Had the same

amount of brick, stone, and mortar, without any further outlay than that at present observable, fallen into the hands of architects possessed of real taste, the present town of Melbourne might have been a standing and permanent monument of which Englishmen might have been proud. Even its solidly-constructed stone buildings, calculated to resist the power of the elements for centuries, bear the marks of being far too hurriedly put together. This might have been avoided. The town of Melbourne will remain, for some time to come, a memento of the old country ; one, too, not of a very high and complimentary character. It represents, in a marked manner, and in dark and gloomy colours, the uneducated and tasteless classes which form so striking a feature in the great social fabric of the present community of Englishmen. It will remain a future indication to the rising generation of Englishmen and Melbournites, that their fathers and mothers belonged to a great and noble country, dispossessed, in a great measure, of good taste, and only partly educated. The *lesson* will be a valuable one. I am sure they will both profit by the *lesson*. When the traveller turns his attention from the buildings, streets, and town, to that of the population and their various pursuits, he then beholds the medal on its reversed side. The aspect of things then is one of those in which none but Englishmen could have effected what is observable ; a reality which some twenty years ago would have been deemed fit data for a romance—imagery for a picture—food for the fancy—a dream not to be forgotten. The most leading and striking element of this complicated and striking mass of mortality is, that you see a

vital activity, a dogged and determined energy; the old Anglo-Saxon blood purging itself of its heavier and roast-beef qualities imparted to it in England; taking in new life; budding afresh, under the stimulating influence of the Australian sun. You are accustomed to the lazy, and lounging, and noblerizing community too extensively and too often to be found in the towns of New Zealand and in Sydney, where people prefer talking to working, nobblers\* to occupation, and work only for a short time in order to remain idle for a longer interval. This may be found, and too extensively too, in Melbourne in certain localities, but it is not the characteristic and prevailing feature. In the main streets you see but few idle people; you are a stranger and a visitor anxious to converse with the first man you meet in such a strange part of the world; you have a difficulty in finding your man; you sympathize with the hurried pace everywhere observable; you know that everybody is seriously occupied in making money, and you are afraid to ask questions; you at last enter a shop with an apology, and now briefly put your questions, and should you come into contact with a rude man, he plainly tells you by his most significant and short answers that you are not one of his customers, you are bringing no grist to the mill; you quit your shop-keeper deeming him a surly fellow. You perceive peculiarly constructed carriages or cars trotting at the rate of nine and ten miles an hour even in the town, and on the road to St. Kilda, the dust they are there kicking up amply testifies to you the active business habits of the

\* A "nobbler" is, I believe, half a glass of grog or spirit.

people of Melbourne. The hurried walker, the horse in full trot, the busy shop-boy, the laden waggons and drays, all bespeak a new London at the antipodes. These Melbournites have just arrived in time to stir up the lazy people in general to be found at the antipodes. They have come most opportunely. They are little aware what great reformers they are about to become, not only to Australia and New Zealand, but to the old world besides. It will be with her as it has been with America, the watchword *en avant* is her destiny, if she have the head, and the heart, and the energy to fulfil it.

Melbourne possesses an excellent university, which at present has but few students. It contains a museum well supplied with the zoology of Victoria, but very seldom frequented. For the information of intending emigrants I will give a few of its statutes and regulations. The university was opened by the Governor on the 3rd of October, 1855. No religious test shall be administered to any person in order to entitle him to be admitted as a student of the said university, or to hold office therein, or to graduate thereat, or to hold any advantage or privilege thereof. The public have free access to the library, museum, and grounds of the university, subject to the following regulations:—The library is open every week-day from 9.30 a.m. to 4.30 p.m. The public have free access to the library. The museum is open to the public daily. Visitors are admitted to the grounds of the university on Sunday from 10 o'clock p.m. till sunset, and on other days between the hours of 7 a.m. and 6 p.m. Persons may attend the lectures of any of the professors without having passed the matriculation, or any other examination. They are required to enter



their names and pay a fee of £2 per term for each course of lectures. They are not allowed to compete for scholarships, prizes, or honours, or to enjoy the other privileges of matriculated students.

Table of fees:— For matriculation £2; for lectures, each term £4; for the degree of B.A. £5; for the degree of M.A. £10. Students are required to pursue, after matriculation, the following course of instruction, extending over a period of three years, and to attend in each year five at least of the courses of lectures set down under that year:—First year—The Greek language; the Latin language; the English language; geometry, and geometrical trigonometry; algebra, and algebraical trigonometry; the elements of botany, chemistry, and mineralogy; history. Second year—classics, logic, natural philosophy, analytical geometry, and the differential calculus, with applications; the elements of botany, chemistry, and mineralogy; comparative anatomy and zoology; palæontology and geology; history. Third year—classics; comparative philosophy; mixed mathematics; natural philosophy; comparative anatomy and zoology; palæontology and geology; history; political economy. It is the intention of the council to apply to the legislature for power to confer the degree of Bachelor of Philosophy on those who shall not have selected their courses in the manner required for the degree of B.A., but shall have complied with the foregoing regulations in other respects. Should the power to confer this degree not be obtained, the council will grant instead a certificate of Associate of the University. I think the germs of something new may be seen issuing from some of these regu-

lations. The university is tolerably well designed, but the stone is very badly wrought, and the mortar most carelessly filled in. The stone, I was informed, was imported from Van Diemen's Land. The building erected by the Brokers' Association may be mentioned as an example, perhaps, of better work, with a very fair design. The Savings Bank affords an instance of good details and workmanship, with a curious medley of the square and round windows, with vases and other efforts at ornamentation—I think a little out of harmony. Art, when well carried out, and perfectly executed, whenever and wherever seen, will be found to be in perfect unison with the wonderful works of nature. I have previously spoken of the ship as the connecting link between heaven and earth, when seen in the latitudes of the trade-winds, as an instance of this kind. I could not give a better example of the opposite kind than suggesting to the reader a picture of the town of Melbourne, as I once saw it in the environs, under the most glorious sky that I ever beheld during the whole of my travels. If the present town of Melbourne had been blown up with gunpowder, and shivered into a thousand forms, assuming shapes all contrary to the rules of art, it could not have presented a greater disfigurement to the beauteous sky under which it stood than the form that it possessed at that time. I will refer the reader and traveller to the windows of the church of St. James, and the position of the organ, I think, of St. Paul's (the church that stands opposite to the Prince of Wales hotel), as instances of a barbarous taste. Another institution which I think highly honourable to the town of Melbourne,

an account of which I was preparing, but, being suddenly called away to New Zealand, I did not complete it; but the following paragraphs will be sufficiently intelligible to show the philanthropy of the institution, "The Melbourne City Court Missionary and Female Reformatory Home Society." This society has been instituted for the reclamation of inebriates, the prevention of drunkenness, and concomitant crimes; the instruction of the uneducated poor, and the amelioration of their circumstances; the rescue and reformation of unhappy females who have departed from the path of virtue, and for the promotion of evangelical principles and practice, and has, therefore, strong claims upon the sympathies of the benevolent public for support.

In accordance with the comprehensive spirit of the Gospel and true philanthropy, ministrations are daily proffered to all classes, ages, and denominations. This sphere of evangelical and philanthropic labour in the city and suburban districts has been occupied now nearly four years. During most of this period the City Court has been the centre of operations. Reformatory efforts have daily been made upon fearful multitudes of offenders; many female and juvenile culprits are amongst them. It is a mournful fact, seven-tenths trace their crimes, degradations, and wretchedness to the vice of drunkenness. In this connexion it may be recorded that within about 2,000 within the sphere of the mission have promised in writing to abjure the use of all intoxicating liquors. From the City Court, as the centre of the mission, truth as in divergent lines, in the form of the Holy Scriptures, evangelical and temperance

tracts, and oral instruction, has continuously gone forth throughout the city and suburbs and surrounding country. About 800,000 pages of tracts and 150 copies of the Scriptures have been distributed. The abodes of the poor, the sick, the friendless, the miserable and wretched are constantly visited, and in addition to the efforts for moral and religious instruction, frequent relief is administered to the necessitous in the form of food and clothing, medicine and nursing. This mode of procedure is most unquestionably sanctioned by the example of Him who ever went about doing good, both to the soul and the body. A female reformatory, or house of refuge for unhappy females of the town, has recently been open on the premises of the Mission House, 77, Spring-street; and seven of the most hopeless females of the town have been admitted. Their present convictions inspire the hope that they will yet become useful members of society, and like unto Mary Magdalene, obtain pardon and peace and salvation through the blood of the Atonement. Many others, we have reason to believe, will soon follow their example. Present arrangements will only admit the presence of seven or eight; larger premises will no doubt soon be necessary. The foundation of this highly important and long-contemplated institution is now laid; the work is commenced, and the beginning is promising. Our incipient operations are necessarily limited; lest the day of small things be despised, let it be borne in mind that the germ becomes a tree. The sources of the largest rivers are scarcely perceptible. Let us labour, and with submissive faith, and leave results with Omnipot-

tent Benevolence. If with the utmost diligence we rescue only one Mary Magdalene from among the many scores of prostitutes now disgracing the streets of Melbourne, we shall not have devoted time, labour, and money in vain. Who can tell the value of one soul? The City Court Missionary and Female Reformatory Home Society will be more or less intimately associated with the Industrial Home or Model Farm Institution, the "contemplated Sailors' Home," the Bible Society, the Tract Society, and to a certain extent will perform the part of an auxiliary to these important institutions. Although we must necessarily bestow more abundant labour on the city and suburbs, yet it is our purpose, so soon as the increase of ministering members of the mission shall justify it, to extend our efforts to the interior, and especially to the gold-fields. Here I was called away most suddenly, on a fearful necessity to embark on board a vessel bound for New Zealand, which prevented me giving the whole of these interesting, philanthropic, and Christian regulations of this noble institution.

Another excellent institution I visited. Its object may be told in a few words. Objects:—To relieve the aged, infirm, or destitute of all creeds and nations, and to minister to them the comforts of religion. 1. By receiving and maintaining in a suitable building such as may be most benefited by being inmates of the asylum. 2. By giving out-door relief in kind to families and individuals in temporary distress. 3. By affording medical assistance and medicine, through the establishment of a dispensary or otherwise. 4. By affording facilities for religious instruction

and consolation to the inmates of the asylum. I visited this excellent institution, and was much pleased with the care and attention, and Christian kindness that appeared to be tendered to the aged, the infirm, the poor, and the unfortunate. The institution contained 120 beds. It is a sort of substitute for the Union; there being neither poor laws or unions in the land of Victoria.

I was so much pleased with the Mechanics' Institution, that I shall here give some of its rules and regulations for the information of mechanics intending to emigrate. This institution was founded in 1839; and during its sixteen years of existence has been almost the sole public literary institution in the colony. It has for its object the diffusion of literary, scientific, and other useful knowledge amongst its members—which is sought to be attained by means of a circulating library, a reading-room, the establishment of classes, and the delivery of lectures on natural and experimental philosophy, practical mechanics, astronomy, chemistry, natural history, literature, and the useful and ornamental arts; particularly those which have more immediate reference to the colony. The library, which now numbers more than six thousand volumes, is a valuable collection of the choicest treasures of literature; by monthly consignments from Britain, it keeps pace with the general advancement of literature, and affords the inhabitants the opportunity of perusing the most recent productions of the press. The reading-room is liberally supplied with all the colonial newspapers, and those of the American and British capitals, and also with a numerous assemblage

of magazines, reviews, and other periodicals. Globes, maps, books of reference, prices current, &c., are also provided for the convenience of the members. The library of reference is well stocked with works on the most technical subjects — encyclopædias, gazetteers, dictionaries, directories, and files of newspapers, British, Continental, American, and Australian. The lectures delivered before the members have most of them been of a very superior order. The series is still in course of delivery, and the members are entitled to their use on all occasions, and are privileged to be accompanied by one lady each. A discussion-class is now in the course of formation, and the committee are desirous of affording every facility in their power for the establishment of other classes. The terms of the institution are exceedingly moderate; no difficulties beset those who promise joining. Upon the free payment of the entrance-fee and subscription, the new member is placed in a position to avail himself of all the privileges of the institution. Persons can join at any period of the year. Annual subscriptions entitling members to the use of the library, reading-room and lectures, &c., £1; entrance-fee payable by new members, 10s.; life membership, £10 10s. Subscriptions must be paid in advance, and, to accommodate artizans, may be paid quarterly. For these latter, also, it is modified to 5s. The sons and apprentices of members, under eighteen years of age, may be admitted as junior members, upon payment of the regular entrance fee, and 10s. annual subscription. Members have the privilege of obtaining for any friend, who shall live

beyond the precincts of Melbourne, or who shall be a military or naval officer on actual service, or the captain of a vessel trading to the port, free admission to the reading-room for a period of one month in any year, by entering the name and address in the introduction-book. In order to give the emigrants an idea of the nature of the institution, I give a list of the newspapers:—Foreign newspapers: The Times, Illustrated London News, Spectator, Economist, Jewish Chronicle, Household Narrative, Mining Journal, Gardener's Chronicle, Punch, Home News, Nonconformist, Liverpool Albion, Scotsman, Glasgow Herald, Dublin Evening Mail, Dublin Evening Post, New York Herald, New York Tribune, Daily Ultra California, Moniteur, Allgemeine Zeitung, South African Advertiser, Straits Times. Victoria newspapers: Argus, Age, Morning Herald, The Auction Mart Journal of Commerce, Australian Builder, Herald, Advertiser, Telegraph, and Sporting Times, Melbourne Punch, Geelong Advertiser, Belford Gazette, Ovens and Murray Advertiser, Creswick Chronicle, Portland Guardian, Maryborough Times, Branch Alexander Mail, Ballarat Times. New South Wales newspapers: Sydney Morning Herald, The Empire. From South Australia: Adelaide Observer, South Australian Register. From Tasmania: Hobart Town Courier, Launceston Examiner, Colonial Times, Tasmanian Daily News. From New Zealand: New Zealander, Southern Cross. Reviews: Edinburgh, Quarterly, North British. Magazines: Blackwood's, Colburn's New Monthly, Dublin University, Bentley's Miscellany, United Service, Tait, Fraser, Art Journal, Builder, Athenæum, Lancet,



Law Times, Household Words, Hogg's Instructor, Eliza Cook's Journal, Family Herald, Chambers's Journal, Glasgow Practical Mechanics' and Engineers' Magazine, New Army List, New Navy List, Chemical, Civil Engineer and Architects' Magazine, Nautical, Hunt's Merchants' Magazine, London Philosophical Magazine, Edinburgh Magazine of Natural History. Works of reference: Government Gazette, Votes and Proceedings of Legislative Councils of Victoria and New South Wales, Acts and Ordinances of the Victoria and New South Wales Legislations, Callaghan's Acts and Ordinances of New South Wales, encyclopædias, directories, news files, maps, globes, &c. Among the classes of the institution may be enumerated an English, French, Latin, and mathematical class; a class for instruction in chemistry and experimental philosophy; and a class for vocal music. Classes for the following subjects will be formed when sufficient number of names are enrolled, viz., Greek, German, elocution, and drawing. I shall make no apology to my readers for having introduced these educational institutions. There is an old proverb, "Tell what company you keep, and I will tell you who you are." There is another very good indication of the character of an individual, viz., by looking into his library you may judge pretty accurately of his taste, acquirements, and even some guess may be made as to the nature of the man. It is the same with a town. I was happy to find when going over the Mechanics' Institution that it was in full operation, distributing all its resources to hundreds of hungry individuals seeking instruction. I visited a grammar-school on the road to

St. Kilda, at that time not opened. This school is intended as a feeder to the university, and it is expected, when opened, to do good work. I thought it one of the best buildings I had seen in Melbourne, in regard to its details and internal fittings. I paid a visit to the National Model School, where I was much struck with the excellence of the system and particularly with the able master, with whom I had the pleasure of a little conversation. I found him drilling the boys like a military commander, and teaching them manners at the same time, a thing of all others most wanted in our schools at home, especially in those established for the lower orders, and the majority who attend this school belong to that class. There are, besides, several denominational schools of various kinds, giving instruction, not only to their own denomination, but admitting others. This system is somewhat anomalous and ill-defined. I am much inclined to the opinion that the national system will leave them all in the background. Among other institutions in Melbourne deserving of notice is the Immigration Depot. Having been for many years the strong advocate of emigration, I felt it my duty, after coming out in an emigrant vessel, to pay a visit to so useful an establishment. In relation to this institution I met with the following advertisement:—"Disclosures of the Immigration Depot. A public meeting will be held on Friday, 21st of August, at the Belvedere Hotel, Collingwood, at seven o'clock, to discuss the following questions:—Is it true that respectable females dress and undress in the presence of numbers of the other sex? Is it true that women are con-

fined in a dismal cold building not fit for cattle ; and if so, do they obtain anything more than the regular rations ? Is it true that the only partition between families is nine and a half inches high ? Is it true that females, when undressed, have to climb six feet to get into their sleeping berths ?" I went over the institution in the day-time, when of course there was no opportunity of deciding the questions mooted in the above paper. One thing, however, I observed, which I must relate as a thing highly derogatory and even disgraceful to the town of Melbourne, viz., the site of the building being situated in a valley, where stagnant water of the most abominable description had collected in sufficient quantity to poison any amount of pigs, horses, and cattle. Let the people remember the class from which many of them have so successfully risen, and not treat these poor immigrants as beasts of burden.

At the top of a hill, outside the town, may be observed a large and isolated building built of wood, in appearance rather attractive until approached, when the traveller suddenly must feel the truthfulness of the poet who exclaimed,—  
" 'Tis distance lends enchantment to the view !" which is most applicable to this building, being the great exhibition building, now used for concerts and other public meetings. I went to the hospital and there chatted some time with a non-medical official, who informed me that I must come next day at a certain hour if I intended to see a medical man in connection with the establishment. I was prevented, however, paying a visit to the hospital, but I learnt from this person

that they had beds for 180 persons ; and, further, from Dr. Hunt, that dysentery prevails in the summer-time ; that the eyes suffer from what is termed bite and blight—the one a temporary and a disagreeable complaint, accompanied with much swelling, the other a complaint of a serious nature ending in the entire destruction of that organ. I paid a visit to one of those law courts where Molesworth sat as judge. At the time I entered, the Geelong Railway case was fiercely contested. I heard the attorney-general address the court upon a subject in a very able, and eloquent, and lawyer-like manner. The legal gentlemen seemed to enjoy themselves amazingly—to crack their jokes in a manner which might indicate that some of these gentlemen might be contributors to the *Melbourne Punch*. They appeared less ceremonious than in the old country. One of their late judges, Sir William A'Beckett, was, I think, brother to a well-known contributor to our English *Punch*. It is probable they learnt their system of saying things, *à la Punch*, from him. I went to the jail, the prisoners were those who had been convicted and those who had to undergo trial. The amount of prisoners did not exceed 150, a thing somewhat complimentary to the town of Melbourne, the modern colonists of Melbourne forming but a mere sprinkling among the inmates of the jail, the greater part of the prisoners being old convicts from Van Diemen's Land, New South Wales, and Norfolk Island, and freed persons. The official here somewhat rightly refused to allow me to see the jail without an order from the sheriff, whom I found busily

employed in the court-house in the affair of the Geelong Railway. As a traveller and stranger, and temporary visitor to the town, I begged him to allow me to inspect the prison, apologizing at the same time for addressing him in the court. To this he demurred for some time ; but, pressing him very hard with all the *suaviter in modo* at my command, I carried my point. Neither the solitary nor silent systems were adopted, and in this prison no particular trades were followed, as in some others. They keep them, nevertheless, fully occupied in a part denominated the labour yard. Robberies were very common some three or four years since. I made some inquiries as to the education of the offspring of these unfortunates, and learnt that it could be given them if desired. There are two clubs, the Victoria and the Melbourne; I went over them both. I was objected to as a stranger and a traveller, not having a letter of introduction by one of the officials, rather in a proud and overbearing manner, when I handed him my card to present to any member of the club who might not be too mighty to show a little attention to an English traveller. I succeeded. At the other club I met the house-steward and informed him that I was a member of a London club, upon which I was very politely bowed to and instantly shown over the building. These two clubs were small and comfortable houses rather than anything else, and contained but little worthy of the notice either of the traveller or of the member of a London club. Another thing worth seeing is the Stockfold, situated at some distance from the town, in the middle of

a desert-like country, where nothing but sand and mud form the surface of the ground, without a particle of anything green. It is here that the wild cattle are brought from the interior in a perfectly wild state, and there temporarily placed until purchased by the butcher. It is here that I was asked thirty pounds, I think, for a shepherd dog, by an individual as rude and rough as could well be found in the whole of the Australian continent. This individual was not a solitary specimen of his class; some of the most barbarous specimens of the white man may be found at the Australian stock station, where perhaps the man may have resided for twenty years of his life without seeing the inside of a church, where he has been partly occupied in uttering such execrations and oaths as could only be assigned to a fiend of darkness. It is here that the purchaser, as well as the looker-on, may get gored by these wild animals if he be not well on the alert. It is here that the Australian stock-whip, with its short stumpy handle joined to a thong seven or eight times its length, thick as a little boa constrictor in the middle, and gradually tapering towards its extremities, which, when well cracked, gives a report nearly as loud as a pistol, and, when executed in the wild forest, under favourable circumstances, echoes again and again in a most astonishing manner. It was here that I observed a sheep get away from a butcher, who, when he caught it, put a ligature so tight round the legs of the poor thing as to entirely cramp all the muscles; after which he expected it to walk, which it was incapable of doing, when he urged

it with kicks, and so forced the poor brute, with pushing it about, to contrive to get it to its place of destination. This was a case for the Society for the Protection or Prevention of Cruelty to Animals. I believe there is such a society in Melbourne. They would do well to be on the alert.

To those who are interested in agriculture, and who may entertain doubts how far that can be profitably pursued in Victoria, I may mention that when I was at Melbourne, 11 farms, of from 30 to 80 acres, the property of Thomas Walker, Esq., and situated in the parish of Barrabool, about three miles from Geelong, were leased by auction at the rooms of Messrs. MacDonald & Co., for seven and a half years, at prices varying from 10s. to £4 12s. per acre per annum, with the option of purchasing at £15 per acre within fifteen years. This information touching agriculture I have given under the article Melbourne; for this reason, that the district spoken of lies within a short distance of that town. Strolling out one Sunday about noon, by the side of the river Yara Yara, in front of numerous wharves, I observed numbers of people congregated together, some of whom were divided into groups, clearly indicating something in the shape of lecturing or preaching to be going on. I repaired to the spot, and there found a well-dressed person delivering a lecture to the audience, which consisted principally of working-men, occasionally interspersed with other grades, upon the subject of temperance. The lecturer, with great energy and much gesticulation, appealed to them with

great earnestness upon the subject. "I am satisfied," said he, "that more than half—nay, I am convinced, that two-thirds—of all your miseries arise from drunkenness. The money that you have gained by hard and honourable labour has been squandered away in drunkenness. The poor wife has been left in solitude at home, surrounded by her children, in a state of poverty, to mourn her lot in life, from having taken to the altar a drunkard for a husband. The money with which you ought to have discharged your debts has been spent in the pot-house, and your characters as men have thereby suffered, placing you among the dishonourable of the land. Half the crime in the country has been produced by swallowing your liquid poison, which is destructive to the soul as well as to the body :

“ ‘ Oh, that man should put an enemy in his mouth,  
To steal away his brains ! ’ ”

Here I left the temperance lecturer for one of another kind. Observing another group getting harangued by an individual provided with excellent lungs, elevated on his platform, I approached him, and found that he had chosen for his subject the *Argus* newspaper. From what I could make out from listening to him for a very short time, the lecturer was a kind of walking and living advertisement, strongly recommending and justifying the proprietor and the paper. Being Sunday, and the subject a political one, I quickly left him to approach another and very singularly attired gentleman, voci-



ferating very loudly to his audience. As I approached the preacher (for such he was, to my utter astonishment), attired in a broad-brimmed white hat, with a band of black crape tied round it—a most fresh-coloured and vivid blue coat, ornamented with large and handsome metal buttons, with a pair of drab trousers, to complete the costume of this remarkable religionist and preacher, I found him surrounded by ten or fifteen of his own sect, attired in a similar costume, with a plentiful audience of working-people, including smartly-attired females, listening most attentively. The part of his discourse that I heard, touched upon the crucifixion of our Saviour, proving by a bible reference that it was not the Jews that crucified our Lord, but the Gentiles. I had some difficulty in making out his sect, and also in fully comprehending the meaning of his discourse. At the end of his sermon he offered for sale some religious pamphlets, price one shilling, as his only means of subsistence. I then approached him, for the purpose of putting a few questions, his audience very politely making way for me; they being of opinion, no doubt, that I was about to enlighten them on the subject, by disputing the religious tenets of the preacher, and by so doing contribute to their amusement and edification. In this, however, they were disappointed; for, after ascertaining his name and address, and that he belonged to a sect denominated Converted Jews, or Christian Israelites, who are still in search of the lost ten tribes, I took my leave of him, intending to have a little conversation with him on a future day. But here I saw this very ex-

traordinary man and his coadjutors for the last time.

Quitting this promenade and lecturing locality for one of another kind, which appeared somewhat attractive to the eye of the traveller and stranger—continuing in a straight line, I soon found myself without the precincts of Melbourne, in the neighbourhood of a single hill beautifully green with grass, similar, in many respects, to Primrose-hill, near Highgate. This is Bateman's Hill, named after one of the early settlers. I mounted to the summit, which, when reached, gives the stranger an excellent view of the shipping, harbour, and town. On one side is a flat district, in the direction of Saundridge, where the fresh water and the sea seem to mingle their waters—a kind of demi-semi bog and desert, sea-shore and lake, curiously commingled, including a view of the river Yara Yara, as it winds its way over to Williams-town, through a country not at all picturesque. Some parts of the streets of Melbourne, as you approach the suburbs, are not at all dissimilar to houses temporarily placed in a ploughed field. This is singular enough for a town, but no more singular than true. This may be remarked at North Melbourne, where may be seen a surface of country, when you arrive outside the town, similar to the sea-shore, sooner than the desert. Further on the scene changes, by becoming well timbered. At a distance, perhaps, of a mile and a half from the town, situated in a well-wooded part of the country, and giving a view of another part in the distance, provided with many of the elements of a fine landscape,

stands the Cemetery, as yet in its infancy. The site is well chosen, including a very extensive area. The view of the surrounding country will amply repay the stranger for his walk to the cemetery. Between Saundridge and Melbourne is a very flat district, with fern and other green patches of vegetation, but chiefly composed of sand, resembling a desert, rather than anything else. The boggy parts of this interval are crossed by means of wooden scaffold-work, in the waters of which may be heard strange noises arising from the insect tribes that there exist. At the time that I crossed it it was one continuous, noisy rattling, without a moment's intermission. Across the park to the Botanic Gardens is a scene entirely of another character, everything wearing its green livery on a soil gently undulating and well timbered. The trees, however, in this part are not healthy-looking, neither are they in the least ornamental. Dr. Muller, a very distinguished botanist, the director of the garden, gave me a commission to execute for him in New Zealand, which was to beg of the heads of the Government of the various settlements to forward him seeds and plants of their various provinces best suited for growth, shade, and ornament; which request I took particular care to mention to the Government officials, especially to the superintendent of the Wellington settlement. This side of Melbourne, when ornamented with trees of New Zealand, will become one of its most attractive parts. Dr. Muller intended to commence planting his trees as soon as they arrived. The leaf, or phyllodium as it is scientifically termed by botanists, hung most drooping and

despondingly on the trees at the time that I visited the Botanic Gardens ; and the trees near to the turnpike, between Saundridge and Melbourne, were the most miserable, dwarfish, scabbed, skin-diseased looking things I ever beheld.

I must not forget to mention the Legislative Assembly and Council. It is said that this building when finished will cost £500,000. What I saw of it both inside and out induced me to conclude that the architect is not one of the greatest geniuses under the sun. However, I have been informed that the part at present constructed is only a kind of nucleus or embryo. I was present in the Legislative Assembly during a debate upon railways in a very tall and spacious apartment, elegantly furnished on its floor, and I think most highly decorated with a prominent, profuse, and vulgar ornamentation above. Besides the above, Melbourne possesses its theatres, a circus, its casinos, a Cremorne, and its Zoological Gardens.

When I landed at Melbourne in the month of August I found the temperature 66° Fahr. Fires at that time were not only tolerable, but extremely comfortable and even necessary at all times at that season of the year. In the middle of the day I found the sun warm. One morning, looking out of my bedroom window at the "Prince of Wales," which gives a good view of the country, I observed clouds of dust flying in every direction, and sufficiently dense to darken the sun. I shall not readily forget the peculiarity of the scene. I went into the streets, where I found the dust flying in such quantities that rendered walking

and recreation an affair attended with the risk of catching a violent ophthalmia. Gentlemen during these windy and dusty days invariably wear veils. Not being provided with one, I took the precaution to keep my eyes shut, only opening them to take a mere glimpse of a passenger or a cart that happened to be approaching. I thought of the comfortable climate of old England, and said in my heart "with all thy faults I love thee still." During this remarkable day I went to make a call upon a friend at Yara Yara, a short distance from the town. On going there I found the clouds so dark and dense, and terrifically black, mingled with the dust, for aërial companions, gave indications of both wind and rain, which, to be thoroughly appreciated, must be witnessed. This was what is called one of their southerly bursters running along the coast-line. These dark and dense clouds, commingled with the dust of the earth, presented an appearance not only peculiar but one of the most startling kind. Its aspect seemed to threaten with the attitude of a relentless fiend, foreboding annihilation to humanity, the earth, and the atmosphere. The earth was literally blown up into the air, while the clouds charged with their cataracts of rain threatened the earth with a deluge of no ordinary kind. The rain falls to such an extent in Melbourne that upon one occasion, during my sojourn, the gutters by the side of the slabs were swollen so much as to require bridges over them. I measured one of the widest and found it eighteen yards across. On one occasion a dray was carried away in crossing one of these swollen gutters after a heavy rain, and its

driver drowned. This may sound strange to a cockney. Observing a lady in the street wearing Wellington boots, at a time when she seemed more afraid of the dirt than the rain, I thought it rather singular, especially when the summits appeared fringed with something like a frill.

Having frequently questioned respectable people with whom I came in contact as to what number of American settlers there were in Victoria, and having received the most opposite and contradictory replies, I, determined to have recourse to a more reliable source of information, went to a Government department, and there met with a statistical individual, who informed me that they amounted to 3,000 only. Upon one occasion, when walking on the road to St. Kilda, I observed a man in a red coat, well mounted, booted, and spurred, with whip in hand, which left no doubt in my mind as to his occupation, but, on inquiry, I found that the gentleman whom I had put down for a fox-hunter pursued animals of another description—viz., the kangaroo and the wild dog.

Having learnt that Mrs. Chisholm, who has made her name so widely known upon the subject of emigration, resided in Melbourne, I determined to do myself the honour of calling upon her. I had no letter of introduction to either Mrs. Chisholm, or any other individual in the town of Melbourne; and I may remark, with very great truthfulness, that I required none. Civility, united to good manners, occasionally blended with a little humility, and to a considerable amount of self-confidence, is all that is required to travel, not only to Melbourne, but to

every other part of the world. Standing upon a hill, previously described, crowned with the wooden building used some years ago for the purpose of the great Exhibition, I observed within a short distance written up "Chisholm and Brothers," and thinking that I might find the famous Mrs. Chisholm within that building, I repaired to the spot, and on being informed that Mrs. Chisholm was up stairs in her store, or warehouse, I immediately sent up my card, as a traveller and stranger sojourning for a short time in Melbourne. Receiving for answer that Mrs. C. would see me, I mounted a ladder, at the top of which I found her evidently busily employed, surrounded with a number of articles with which her store was furnished. As I approached, gracefully and kindly she tendered me, in a most lady-like manner, her hand, and at the same time begged me to be seated. Her conversation was calculated to make an impression upon the least observant. She possessed not only a great flow of language, with the right words in the right place, but as great a flow of ideas at the same time. I should say, without wishing to flatter, that there are many worse lecturers on elocution than Mrs. Chisholm. She related to me the circumstance of her having met with a working woman, the mother of a very fine intelligent child, that promised to do some good in the world if properly brought up and educated. This child she afterwards met with surrounded with all the vulgarity, and wickedness, and wretchedness of Burke-street, where it was lodged during the time that it was attending school; thereby proving that whatever might be the progress in learning,

it was getting pretty well tutored in the school of vice. In stating to her my opinion of the town of Melbourne as a whole, she pointed out some gross violations of taste in placing the English and Welsh churches by the side of paltry buildings in her own neighbourhood. I perfectly agreed with her upon that subject.

I had had many arguments with different persons upon the subject of the labour-market being overstocked. As the promoter of emigration, I held that if Australia contained 4,000,000 of souls, instead of 900,000, that then it would possess only a tithe of the population it is capable of sustaining when thoroughly developed. Mrs. Chisholm ridiculed the idea of the labour-market being overstocked. She then spoke of the emigrants being hired to work by unfeeling and covetous persons, ever anxious for money-making, going to the immigration depot as soon as a vessel arrived, at a time that the poor creatures were thoroughly upset with the voyage and fatigued with landing. She remarked, they ought to be allowed to recover from the ill effects of the voyage, and the consequent excitement of landing in a fresh climate, at least for a short period. Chatting about the diggings and the mode of transit to those quarters, she remarked that tents ought to be erected along the line for the express accommodation of the immigrants. In case of my going to the diggings, Mrs. Chisholm promised me a letter of introduction to one of her sons.

Now a few words respecting the price of things. My experience as a purchaser of articles in the town of Melbourne was most limited, in



the strictest sense of the word. I bought but one article, a common clay pipe (not a Milo), a very ordinary one, for which I paid sixpence—a half-penny would have been the price in England. I went into a hair-dresser's shop, telling them that I was a fresh arrival, expressly to find out to what extent they would charge me. I sat down without asking the charge. The hair-cutter politely requested to know whether I would have my head washed, to which I replied in the affirmative. After he had gone on washing for some time, I said, "How much is the cutting, and what is the washing?" "A shilling, sir, for cutting, and two shillings for washing;" he replied in the most bland manner possible. "Be assured," said I, "that if I had known that the washing had been two shillings, and the cutting one, rely upon it I should have submitted to the last operation only, and consequently saved two shillings thus uselessly thrown away. But having, as a new chum, made a blind bargain with you, I tell you what you must do, my friend—you must deduct sixpence from the sum total." He said, "Well, sir, I have no objection, on condition that you will recommend my shop." I replied that I should be most happy to do so, and that I was quite sure he would be satisfied with my recommendation, as it would be a very sweeping one. Requiring a hat cleaned, I took it myself to the hatter, and returned in the afternoon to get it, when it suddenly appeared, very carefully encased in white paper, to hide, I suppose, the disgraceful manner in which it was executed. I said, "What is the charge?" "Three shillings and sixpence," was the hatter's reply. By those who were well

acquainted with the current prices of things, I was told that I had been rather moderately dealt with in two cases, viz., the hat and the haircutting, but had been overcharged for the pipe. Observing in the newspapers board and lodging at 25s. per week, I went to one of these places, and found the bedrooms all in common, consisting of a series of bunks, containing at once the sum-total of lodgers. Fruit and vegetables were very dear, cabbages being 1s. each; cauliflowers, 3s.; and oranges, 3d. I was much struck on going into one of the best fruiterer's shops, very near to the Criterion Hotel, in one of the best streets, to purchase a single apple, by the shopkeeper refusing to sell less than a given quantity. Here let me offer one word of advice to all foolish, and perhaps purse-proud people of his class. Be civil upon all occasions, whatever you may demand for your articles, for there is no good to be got by incivility. I was prepared to pay ten times the value of the apple. Had he asked even 5s. for it, I should have paid it. Beef and mutton somewhere about 6d. per pound. A friend of mine paid £6 for a coat made to order; things ready-made of course could be had at a more moderate price.

At the time of my sojourn in Melbourne the price of everything had diminished to a very considerable extent, in comparison to what it was four years ago. At that time money was no more thought of by those who abused it without using it properly than the common manure of the dung-hill. At the Prince of Wales Hotel I found my expenses to be a pound per diem, with three meals a day, merely drinking draught ale, without wine or grog. They charged me for my breakfast

five shillings upon one occasion, at the time that I was invalided, and not taking any. I mentioned this to the waiter as an apparent monstrosity, to which he replied, "It is the custom of the house." Several mornings I had a small basin of arrow-root for breakfast, while labouring under a fit of influenza, for which they made me pay the price of the ordinary breakfast, viz., five shillings. I thought this rather sharp practice. Three or four years ago in Melbourne they had the hardihood to ask £50 a week for a sty that did not cost £100 in building. When things were ranging at the highest prices, a landlord of an inn took £10,000 in one week at Geelong. While at the Prince of Wales a barrel-organ was playing outside; the organist, after he had finished, presented himself to a gentleman near to me, who without any hesitation made him a present of 1s. 6d. I heard of a bullock-driver who had suddenly made money, and who congratulated himself upon his good fortune by being liberal in the following manner:—He purchased as much champagne as he could stow away into a wheelbarrow, knocked off the heads of the champagne-bottles, put the contents into a bucket, sallied into the streets, and invited everybody that he met to drink with him. Nine months ago the wages of stonemasons were 15s. a day only; four years ago they received 35s. A Mr. Churnsides, a well-known squatter, who has a station not far from the town of Melbourne, paid for some portion of it, if I am rightly informed, £10 per acre, and £2 for the remainder. The present price of land is £1 per acre. £1,500 a year either has been, or is now, the rental of a good house in Collins-street, one

of the best constructed as well as one of the most fashionable streets of the town. This street is the only exception to that incongruous mass of buildings to be found in Melbourne. When finished it will be one of the most elegant in the town, possessing both harmony and beauty of design. A gentleman squatter informed me that his father purchased some land for £300 at a distance of seven or eight miles from Melbourne, and sold the same in a few years for £53,000. The purchase, of course, was made before the discovery of gold. A person informed me that an individual realized £25,000 in eighteen months. What amount of capital he had to start with I know not, but most probably a few shillings, or perhaps none at all. There are men both in Victoria and New South Wales worth their £50,000 a year, whose manners, education, and parentage, perhaps, don't rank very high. Going down to William's Town one day, I fell in with a passenger trading in different kinds of vegetables. He informed me that he sold three turnips for 5d.: a bystander, listening to our conversation, stated that he had been informed that cabbage-leaves in a state of decomposition had been picked up out of the streets and gutters of the town and sold to the eating-houses. Three roods of ground near to the Union Bank of Australia sold for the enormous sum of £43,000. One day, calling at the bank for some cash, I had an opportunity of verifying this statement, which on inquiry I found to be quite correct. Ordinary female servants had wages to the amount of £40 per annum. The inhabitants of Melbourne are so intent upon money-making, that

they scarcely afford themselves a day's pleasure. My authority upon this subject was an old Scotchman that I met with in the country, who had gone there for recreation. He, being a Presbyterian, informed me that the free and established churches of Scotland had disagreed, which was the means of laying the foundation of a third party. One day, when crossing the harbour of Melbourne, I passed very near to a small craft, not more than 15 tons burthen. The captain of the vessel said that little 15-ton craft lying there, left Penzance in Cornwall with a crew of five men, called at the Cape, where they were intrusted with the mail for Melbourne. This little craft, taken in connection with her voyage from Cornwall to Melbourne, passing through some of the most stormy latitudes of the globe, and the Great Eastern, may be deemed two of the most startling facts of the nineteenth century. Melbourne has a quarry of building-stone at Brunswick, at some distance from the town, consisting of trap-rock; and another at the heads, a distance of forty miles, of freestone.

I waited upon the editor of a statistical journal to obtain a little information upon the subject of journalism, and left him my questions, which he very kindly undertook to answer in a few days, but being suddenly called away to New Zealand, I left Melbourne not only without getting the required information, but without wishing my friends good-by. I returned to Sydney, as a matter of necessity, from New Zealand, which prevented me from revisiting Melbourne and the diggings, Geelong, and other places of interest in Victoria. The early colonists of Victoria were a

stamp of people very different to the class who emigrate to its shores at the present time ; many of them being connected with some of the best classes of the old country. I attended a concert given at the great wooden building previously described as having been used for their public Exhibition. This concert contained the wealth and respectability of the town of Melbourne, with the Governor in the centre—or, rather, his aide-de-camp, as his representative upon the occasion—surrounded by government officials. On glancing around me, I had a good opportunity of seeing the difference that existed, in dress and appearance, between the Governor-coterie and the class by whom it was surrounded. The difference was a very marked one. I met with the greatest civility, upon all occasions, from the people connected with the public institutions, to such a degree, that the same class in the old country would do well, in some instances, to adopt the same line of conduct. I presented myself, quite alone, as a stranger and a traveller, without a letter of introduction, or an order, to all the institutions (with one exception, which was a private club), and was, upon all occasions, treated with as much respect as if I had been a member of the aristocracy of England ; for which I here return my best thanks to those connected with the above institutions in the town of Melbourne. When at the Prince of Wales, I had the opportunity of meeting with legislative men from Sydney, gentlemen from South Australia, senators from Van Diemen's Land, gentlemen squatters of Victoria, and a good many of the members of both houses connected with the Parliament of

Victoria. The squatters that I met with there were many of them well-bred men, some of whom had never been to England for eighteen or twenty years, although men of wealth and good standing. I was much struck with their hairy and manly visages, many of whose countenances showed high breeding united to frankness of manner, not frequently met with in the old country in the same class. The bush-life had completely driven the artificial, at least in manner, out of their mental and bodily constitutions. They were most agreeable and communicative fellows. I have heard that some of the *parvenu* tribe, who have suddenly risen to the possession of great wealth in Australia, have made up their minds to return to the old country to spend it. They have done so. On arrival, however, not being either gentlemen in manners, or, perhaps, men of education, finding themselves shut out of the higher walks of life, they have become suddenly disgusted with the old country, and again returned to Australia. When arrived there they have become, in time, suddenly seized with the mania for home, and started for the old country again; when, on arriving they have again become dissatisfied, and returned to Australia. Some of them are in the habit of doing this to such an extent, as to bear the comparison of clock pendulums of enormous dimensions, whose oscillations extend from Australia to the shores of Great Britain.

Slow was the progress of the population for the first quarter of a century after the establishment of New South Wales colony, it numbering, in 1810, but 8,300 individuals, the far greater por-

tion being convicts. In the next ten years the population more than tripled itself, the number, in 1821, being close on 30,000. In 1833 the population had increased to 60,000—two-fifths of which consisted of convicts in actual bondage, and half of the remaining number were liberated convicts. Progressing steadily, the inhabitants of New South Wales, including the district of Port Phillip (now Victoria), then only a portion of the older colony, numbered 130,000. Ten years later and the numbers were 264,000. South Australia and the Swan River colony, the entire white population of the colonies on the Australian continent, amounted, in 1851, to 336,000 persons; and, including that of Van Diemen's Land, 60,000—the total amounted to about 400,000 persons. Wonderful has been the effect which the nuggets of gold have had on the population of that extraordinary colony—for that of Victoria alone exceeds, at this moment, that of the whole of the different colonies, including Swan River, Tasmania, &c., when the first nugget was found, while the sum total of the population of the whole of the Australian colonies now amounts to about 950,000 souls.



## CHAPTER V.

## DIGGERS AND THE DIGGINGS.

IN the year 1851 I walked to the Turon diggings, distant from Sydney 120 miles. At that time all was tent and temporary wood erections. As I did not visit the Melbourne gold-fields, from the circumstance of being suddenly called away, precludes the possibility of my giving any other account of those parts except that which is derivable from parties who had been there. I lost no opportunity, on all occasions, in availing myself of every opportunity of conversing and questioning all classes with whom I came in contact, from the legislator down to the common digger, upon this all-important and vital question; and, as may be very readily conceived, the information given by these parties, so completely opposite to each other in regard to education, intelligence, and position, was very frequently of a contradictory character. Besides, there is a disposition which, unfortunately, prevails all over the world, more or less, to cram people. I found an instance of this kind the very first day I landed in Melbourne, from a man in a most respectable position, as shopkeeper, who told me one of the greatest lies ever uttered. It is the duty of the traveller to detect as much as

lies in his power those cramming, exaggerating, and lying members of the community. It is not to be expected that a place like Melbourne will not be infested with this species of human vermin—pardon the expression, dear reader. A man honestly and seriously plodding his way up the hill of difficulty, to meet with these brigands on the way is an impediment which calls forth the just indignation of every honest traveller. My informants were frequently very ignorant diggers, only capable of giving information most limited in kind as to what they did, without taking the question in all its bearings. Though not at all responsible for any of the statements, not having personally visited the gold-fields, I may add, that when the opportunity afforded for verifying a statement, I lost no opportunity in availing myself of it.

I have said previously that the Turon diggings, in 1851, were all tent and temporary wood. This state of things at Ballarat, Barkworth, and Castlemaine, has assumed another form, as those places have been converted into absolute towns, with their public buildings, and many of the conveniences of civilized life. In process of time these diggings are to be amply provided with a complete network of railroad. Some of these towns and neighbourhood possess a population of 20,000 souls. I have heard that Ballarat alone contains a population of 40,000, with many valuable public institutions, such as Mechanics' Institution, a School of Arts, Bath-houses, Theatres, &c. &c., and many of the most expensive luxuries of civilized life. These towns and neighbourhood have a military corps heavily armed, called troopers, principally selected from

men who have previously been soldiers, a very efficient body of men, possessed generally of intelligence, education, and character. These men have frequently arduous and important duties to perform, and are great objects of mark for the bushranger (or robber), who, when lying in ambush, occasionally takes a shot at him, whilst he himself is at a loss to know from whence proceeded the cowardly attack of this day and midnight plunderer. The diggings possess besides a body of police, some of whom are in disguise, in order to avail themselves more effectually of their calling, and by such means enables them to pounce upon the thief and the pickpocket without his being able to recognise him. There is, likewise, a coroner in readiness to exercise his vocation. The digger is a good contributor to the revenue. His licence to dig, with other sundries, amounts, perhaps, to £15 per annum, an amount of taxation equal to that paid, in some instances, by the wealthy squatter possessed of his thousands—apparently an anomalous state of things. He is entitled to vote at elections, by virtue of his digging licence. It is here that the tent is the house and only domicile of the digger. If alone, he runs the risk, when sleeping in his tent, of being murdered. If associated with others, a regular watch is kept by one of the party during the night, relieving each other in turns, armed with a revolver. Here it is that every country upon the face of the earth, almost without exception, has its representative. It is a wonderful locality, calculated to produce changes in the great human family as astonishing in effect as any that have occurred during its momentous and eventful

history, from Adam to the present time. Here high aristocracy becomes merged in the throng of the multitude, its only arms being the revolver and the sword, having laid aside its heraldic symbols, and perhaps associated itself, either by accident or intention, with the ill-bred, the low-born, the mannerless, the vagabond, and the rogue. It is here that vice presents such an undaunted front and visage, that occasionally all traces of the finer feelings of humanity seem extinguished, and the devil himself to reign paramount. On the other hand, acts of generosity so noble have been rendered by men to each other, who have met for the first time, such as would stand for a pattern in the best Christian community, in the finest town, in the most civilized part of Christendom. It is here that the eye of suspicion is cast upon every one you meet, and where your nearest neighbour may be as much suspected as your most distant enemy. It is a school of vice, in which the devil performs many of his master-tricks of iniquity to delude and entrap poor mortals ; and, at the same time, a moral training and mental discipline may be acquired, which, if turned to good account, may lead many a man, initiated and debased by sin and folly, and every enormity, to be thoroughly converted to Christianity ; whose future inheritance may be with the angels of light, and ultimately wear the crown that never fadeth.

But now for a few of the black side and some of the fairer features of these very extraordinary localities. Many of the lowest and debased and uneducated classes, instead of taking their children to church to be properly christened, name them them-

selves at home, without the aid of the clergyman, such names as Teddy, Punch, and Jerry being frequently given by these parties to their offspring. I have been told that old drunkards have given brandy and every other kind of liquor to children of three years old, which has half paralysed the tender bud and sent it rolling on the floor of the tent like a young beast of the field, which has excited the merriment and diabolical laugh of the father and mother.

A generosity, tinged with the spirit of devilry, frequently manifests itself. Successful diggers when carousing at a public-house have been known to order boxes of champagne, have knocked off the necks of the bottles, put the contents into buckets, and invited every living soul in the house to participate. Men have gone to public-houses, perhaps, for a simple and single drink, and have absolutely spent £100 before leaving. Some of the greatest vulgarians upon the face of the earth have presented shawls, which have cost 20 guineas, to their female friends as vulgar and as low-lived as themselves. A digger, upon one occasion, ate a five-pound note as a sandwich—placing it between two pieces of bread and butter, as a substitute for ham or beef. One man entered a confectioner's shop to eat a tart; after he had finished he threw down a bank-note and left it without waiting for the change. The waiter at the Prince of Wales told me that it had frequently happened to him, when diggers had ordered a glass of ale and given a bank-note in payment, that when he offered the change the men looked quite astonished, as if they had had neither part nor lot in the balance due to them. It not uncommonly happens that those unsuccessful diggers who have

been brought up with a university education, and reared in the lap of luxury, with even some few members of the aristocracy, become suddenly transformed, through sheer necessity, into boots, waiters, stock and hut keepers. This class make very bad diggers when they cannot stand the fatigue and turmoil of that life—are equally disqualified, from want of experience in book-keeping, as accountants, and so merge themselves into the class I have mentioned.

How are the great fallen ! A gentleman informed me that, whilst travelling in the neighbourhood of these parts, he alighted at an hotel, where he found a countryman of his own, whom he had known well in Ireland, as sheriff of the county, engaged in the capacity of waiter. I sat at the same table with the relation of an English duke, about as disreputable a specimen of his order as could be found among his native class, some few years ago in the town of Sydney. In the same year I fell in with the relation of a Scottish duke, in the capacity of shepherd ; and I know, on pretty good authority, that a very near relation of another English duke was acting in a capacity but very little higher than a common soldier, without having either rank or title, but taking things in common with the remainder of his comrades.

I am indebted to a trooper for the following brief sketch of a very serious riot that took place in 1855. The diggers of Ballarat became discontented with their lot, and sent in a long petition, containing a statement of numerous complaints, which amounted altogether to seventeen. Among these complaints, a reduction of the salaries of the

H

Government officers—reduction of the price of the diggers' licence—with a greater facility of land-purchase, may be mentioned. The Government not heeding the petitions, they at last organized themselves, entrenched themselves in a fortification, the best the skill of their leaders could devise and construct, and so prepared themselves to act on the offensive or defensive, as the exigency might require. Timothy Haynes, I believe an Irishman by birth, who styled himself the modern Washington, with Peter Laula, and Frederick Wernn, a German organist, were the three great heads that organised and led this incongruous mass of silly people to acts of rebellion. An American, with more foresight—a man of head united to a good heart—stood up, and harangued them alone and unsupported, at all risks of being lynched, knocked down, or otherwise dealt with. He told them that the thing was as absurd as it was illegal; that they stood not the slightest chance of success against the well-disciplined troops that would be brought to bear upon them; and that the affair would end in the untimely death of a hundred or two of them, after which they would bring a stigma upon the diggings, never to be forgotten. He said, where are your provisions and stores for a campaign? where is your Washington to lead you on to victory? If you have resolved on being rebels, you have commenced your career without skilful organization and discipline, which can only terminate in defeat, disappointment, and death, to a good many of you. Take my advice, as a fellow-digger, and, although not a subject of Queen Victoria, take warning from what I say—be content and remain as you

are. Australia is far too young to think of shaking off the protecting hand of the mother country, at least for the next fifty years."

At last, however, the grand combat took place. The rioters amounted perhaps to 3,000, entrenched and fully prepared to defend themselves: 250 infantry, with 100 troopers, at last made their appearance in front of the entrenchments reconnoitring. At last the Riot Act was read, begging the people to desist from making any attack, assuring them that in such case they would be very roughly handled. After this, if I am rightly informed, the rebels gave their first fire, which killed a few of the infantry and troopers, wounding others, upon which the word of command was given to the military to advance. The military delivered their first fire with unerring accuracy, which did not fail to produce its effect upon the rebels, who instantly mounted above their entrenchments, making it suddenly black with their presence, to effect their escape. A good many of them scrambled out of the fortification, only to be cut down by the soldiery. Those that remained amounted to about fifty, most of whom were Irish. The infantry that attacked them were Irish also. This induced the remaining rebels to try the following dodge to save their bacon, but without having the slightest effect on their relentless countrymen:—When they were attacked with the never-failing bayonet of the infantry, they exclaimed loudly and unanimously—

"Irishmen! would you kill your countrymen?"

"Yes," said they, "indeed we will, and make you remember the day that you took it into your heads to fire upon soldiers."



Thus ended the affair of Ballarat. I have been informed by the same person, who was present on the occasion of the fight, and who took part in it, that there still exists a party ready to separate from the mother country, and that they have their flag, which is green, whereon is written, "Vivat Australia." Before quitting the subject of the fight, I ought to have added that fifty of the rebels were bayoneted on the spot, with perhaps another 150 who attempted their escape. Twenty or thirty soldiers were killed upon the occasion. I am informed that the rioters were principally Irish, although the Government charged foreigners as having taken an active part in the battle of Ballarat. I remember it being the fashion with some of the leading journals of England, some few years ago, to write the most unmerciful attacks upon the Americans. These attacks were no doubt in the main generally true, but they were little calculated to cement the friendship of the two countries. A favourite subject for an article, and one sure to be read with thrilling interest, would invariably be found to be a case of Lynch-law. The parties who wrote these indignant articles live in a country where a case of Lynch-law never occurred, for the very reason that the circumstances and conditions of an old country and a new one are quite without parallel. They overlooked also the possibility of some of the raggmuffins of Great Britain or Ireland who had gone to the States being the very first to move and take part in this very unjustifiable manner of dealing with crime under peculiar circumstances. They forgot that men who had gone to the backwoods to found the nucleus of an infant

state, unprovided with judge, or jury, or magistrate, were not placed in circumstances the most favourable for fulfilling all the minutes of a code of laws, as it stood in relation to a highly civilized and a very old community. I am not an admirer of Lynch-law, or of those that employ it. This law, I think, may be defined to be the code of the backwoods—not as it exists in the statute-books, but nevertheless containing some of the sound elements of the statute-book. It is a means of putting down vice in the absence of all those authorities that are ordinarily employed. It is surely better that vice should be arrested in its onward movements than be allowed to progress, whatever the means adopted may be, provided they be just, moderate, and reasonable.

“The faults of our neighbours with freedom we blame;  
We tax not ourselves, though we practise the same.”

I made many inquiries as to the existence of Lynch-law in the Australian colonies, and I am happy to state that I only heard of one case in which it had been fully put into practice. The following is a brief sketch of it:—A man of the name of James Croft, a digger, who had been chumming, as it is termed, with another man—living as partners under one tent—suddenly took it into his head to murder his chum, and by so doing become possessed of his gold. He executed his abominable design, but in what particular manner was not related to me. Certain it is, I believe, that after the commission of the horrid deed, the wretch chopped the body into small pieces, consumed a portion by burning, and buried the residue. He at last was discovered,

and Lynched, and buried by the side of the murdered man. The parties who condemned and executed the criminal, buried his gold by his side, and that also belonging to his chum, with their pick-axes, shovels, and spades—thus exemplifying the stern and rigid justice accorded by the Honourable Mr. Justice Lynch and Company. This gold discovery, and its effects upon humanity, in every shape and form—the change it has wrought in the circumstances and conditions of not only Australia and the mother country, but indirectly upon the whole world, and its commerce, and its various monetary systems, will form a fit and complicated theme for that man who shall grapple with the many startling and truly astonishing changes that characterize the nineteenth century as a subject for history. It will be a subject fraught with vast import and interest also to the financier. The divine, and philanthropist, and philosopher, will not forget the data with which it will furnish him—data that will form an almost new epoch in the history of the world.

I will now lead my reader to one of the great changes resulting from the discovery of gold. It is well known that we Europeans stared, some years ago, when we had the opportunity of seeing any Chinese within the precincts of old England. The pent-up way which the Celestial Empire has maintained for these many thousand years past, seem all of a sudden to be breaking up for better for worse, not so much under the influence of war, or the missionaries, as by the power of the gold discovery. We know when and where the gold is found, but who can tell the limits of its

influence, either in time or space? He would be a bold man, and a monstrous wise one too, who dare predict the future effects of this discovery of gold. It is said that there are 40,000 Chinese in Australia. They are much despised and hated by the diggers of Great Britain and Ireland, and looked upon with strong suspicion. As I had but few opportunities of becoming acquainted with them, I shall leave the discussion of that question to the anonymous author of "The Chinese Question Analyzed," who writes in a very impartial and independent tone, as will be seen by the following paragraphs:—"The Chinese upon one occasion have been expelled from a certain digging. They are objected to:—1st, as being aliens; 2nd, as aliens of a kind who do not mix, but continue a foreign community in our midst; 3rd, as being a continual source of apprehension; 4th, as doing nothing to forward the prosperity of the colony; 5th, as carrying away the produce of the country; 6th, as highly immoral; 7th, as likely to induce degeneracy of race by an intermixture of an inferior class; 8th, as obstructing in various methods the operations of European miners." I have placed the divisions of this interesting pamphlet before the reader, in order that he may the better judge of the nature of the book, as I shall only give him fragmentary extracts. The author then begins with his first division, "What is an alien? If we take it to mean a stranger or a foreigner, such they most certainly are. By birth, however, we are all aliens to the territory of this particular colony. But if we consider those only aliens who are not the natural born subjects of her

Majesty, or have not been naturalized as such, then the assertion is only to a degree true. The fact seems to be overlooked, that nearly a quarter of a million of Chinese are our fellow-subjects of the same empire—that the vitality of the important settlements of Hongkong, Singapore, Penang, Labuan, depend in a great measure on their enterprises ; and that no inconsiderable proportion of those now execrated as aliens on our gold-fields came from those colonies. Nevertheless, let these facts be set aside, and let it be granted that they are all aliens. If this alone be sufficient cause for their exclusion, we give up the case at once ; but let French, Spaniards, and Italians, Swiss, Germans, and Americans, be simultaneously proceeded against.” In another part he remarks, “ At the threshold of the question we are unavoidably convinced that many of the ultimate objections to Chinese are bound up with the arguments of the old Immigration Society. It is greatly to be deplored that the intensely selfish feeling (of which the existence of such a party is only a symptom) is but too general among the imperfectly educated classes of this colony ; and that many who ought to wage war against it do much, by their thoughtless bluster, to contribute to its increase. Although it is patent to the humblest capacity that our gold-fields are practically inexhaustible, and that a population ten times as large as the present would barely settle the country, they join the outcry against increased immigration ; they make a grievance of a few thousand ounces exported by Chinamen, and swell the clamour at any further supply of labour.”

Again, the author remarks upon another topic, "The preposterous hypothesis of the Chinese in the colony forming an alliance with any hostile European power, so far exceeds the limits of probability, that we think it unnecessary to deal with it. There is far more likelihood of the peace of the colony being disturbed by a troop of bushrangers, than by a rising of Chinese." In another part, speaking of the Chinese as customers to the colony, with its consequent effect upon the revenue, he continues:—"We have not access to the statistics required for determining the question, but we believe the Chinamen are of small consumption of intoxicating drinks, and a very large consumption of colonial produce, will alone be an offset to all the gold he diverts from colonial channels." The author then considers them under the head of immorality, and proceeds to remark:—"There are certain characters with whom a vague and studiously mysterious rumour, indicating some hideous yet undefined charge, is regarded as a real godsend. They hug it and cherish it, and share it quietly with their friends. They give it the air on fitting occasions, but as it thrives best in the dark, they do not let the light of open examination play upon it. The longer they fondle it the oftener they repeat it, the larger and still larger it looms, and the more firm is their belief in it. Something of this kind is the charge we refer to. The Chinese are accused of immorality, of such a degree, that their very presence is contamination, and the sufferance of it a sin. Now, as we have a particular objection to wrestle with a shadow, we should very much like to learn the facts on

which this argument is founded. As to what may be called the routine crimes of our police courts, we find them singularly guiltless. We look in vain for Chinese parallels to these staggering Europeans, who may be seen of a Saturday in any of our digging townships, puling forth maudlin sentiment, or shouting indecent language after passers-by. We never see Chinese figuring in the police-sheet for assault, and comparatively rarely for larceny. On these points, however, we will be enlightened by returns called for by the assembly. We feel it safe to predict that the cases of the conviction of Chinamen set against those of Europeans, will not be as one to fifty, instead of bearing its proportion of one to eight or nine. We are glad to see a prospect of the tangible part of this objection being finally set aside. It is well known, however, that the anti-Chinese party rely greatly on the power of that fog-wrapt idea to which we have alluded, and which charges the object of their antipathy with a variety of unmentionable crimes. As we have said before, let them produce their evidence. They affect to pride themselves on the English principle of all being innocent till proved guilty. Let them extend the benefit of this to the Chinese. The *onus probandi* lies with the accusers. Let them bring into court ever so disjointed evidence, and they will find a jury but too ready to believe them, and to condemn the accused. The fact is, that the Chinese here generally are superior, in point of morality, to the uneducated classes of our own countrymen. The Confucian code of morals has in many respects an astonishing close resemblance to the best and highest precepts of Christianity."

I may make a remark here which belongs rather to the division of the book under the head of Melbourne, that the commencement of the town of Melbourne in 1852, in a great measure composed of emigrants from the mother country, possessed not only bad and vulgar manners, but a deportment in the highest degree offensive to well-bred people. They addressed everybody that they met, and expected an answer in return, thereby upsetting the old-established customs of the old country. Any man respectably attired in a hat was invariably shunned and posted, because it was not part of the costume of a digger. I am bound to confess, as a traveller, that a more mannerless, degraded, and semi-barbarous people I have never met than the uneducated classes of my own countrymen. And why is it so? Because neither the Government nor the English community thought these poor, forsaken, and neglected creatures worthy of their notice, until within a comparatively recent period.

But to return to the author of the pamphlet. He then speaks of our own race being deteriorated by intermarriage, and relates the proposition in the following manner:—"But the fact is, that the supreme contempt which the uneducated classes of our own countrymen entertain for all coloured races, is quite sufficient to prevent any great extent of intermarriage." The author then goes to another part of his subject, viz., the working out old ground, and there not being a prospecting community. He adds, "The unsteady, shilly-shallying course of procedure adopted by the anti-Chinese party—their trick of setting up accusations that have so often been



knocked over; of quoting, as ascertained facts, what are ascertained falsehoods; and, worst of all, of first inflaming the basest passions of the lower orders, and then appealing to them as judge and jury; all these, we repeat, while going far to show the weakness of their case, go still further to shut them out from the ranks of candid and honest debaters. At present, we will find one portion of them attempting to justify the Bucklanders for expelling the Chinese from the new ground they were then working, because it was new ground. Another set of the Fryerstown-mine rebels pray for their exclusion because they only work old ground, and are not given to prospecting. The real fact of the matter is, that the European miner begrudges even his leavings to a Chinaman. He would rather the gold should remain among the dirt than be raised by a Celestial. He is put to shame by the steady plodding industry that extracts a competency from the old pillars of ground which he declares he left because it would not even grub him. He hates to have a practical lesson in perseverance, economy, and sobriety, constantly taught him by a yellow-skin. His envy of his competitors soon begets hatred, which is speedily conjoined with malice. He is ready to believe and circulate anything to their disadvantage, no matter how calumnious; and if he does not himself commit overt acts of violence, he gives his moral support to any movement for their detriment, applauding its execution by others the more highly, according as he may dread the personal consequences of a similar deed. That which, when practised wholesale by a European, is looked upon as merely an every-day occurrence,

when perpetrated by a Chinaman becomes a serious crime, and calls for direct retribution." In another part, and at the conclusion of the pamphlet, the author proposes certain remedies. "We will now, in as few words as possible, suggest a few measures which it is believed would prove at once remedial and salutary:—1. That after an interval of eighteen months shall have elapsed from the passing of an act to the following effect:—No vessel carrying Chinese passengers be allowed to anchor in any port in Victoria, unless one-half of the said Chinese shall be females; any vessel with passengers in contravention of this rule to be immediately towed to sea, and, if she re-enter any Victorian port, to be confiscated, and the funds employed in returning the male passengers to their homes—let each Chinaman without a wife pay a fine of £20 before landing. 2. That a border police be established, with the view of preventing the entrance of males from other colonies, unless accompanied by an equal number of females. 3. That every Chinese male be obliged to procure a miner's right before being permitted to land or otherwise enter the colony. 4. That a full tax of fifteen shillings, or even £1, quarterly, be imposed upon all Chinese males. Two or three months' notice to be given of its enactment, and its collection entrusted, as far as possible, to Chinese police. Of course we mean that the act imposing a poll-tax of £10, and restricting ships to one Chinese passenger for each ten tons, should be abolished. 5. That authority be produced to compel defaulters to work out the amount of their defalcations, and the expense of their detention on some public work, such as railway cuttings. 6. That a China-

man be rendered legally qualified to hold land in his own name for the purpose of cultivation, and that a bonus or exemption from poll-tax be offered to such as shall introduce and raise new products to a certain extent, until the same shall be cultivated by Europeans. It might also be advisable to give five-year grants of waste and uninhabited lands for the last-named purpose, such land at the expiry of that period to be sold, valuing the improvements. 7. That it be rendered legal for the executive to proclaim, with six months' notice, the imposition of a tax of £100 a head on every Chinese male entering the colony, whether by sea or land. 8. That an officer be established in Hong-kong or Canton, with a view of disseminating information, giving certificates to a proper class of Chinese females, and keeping a check upon emigrant ships. 9. That a simple and clear digest of our laws relating to crimes against the property and the person, and of those for the regulation of gold mining, be rendered into Chinese, and printed in a cheap form, as is the custom in China: they can all read. 10. That in each of the proposed districts for a court of mines, a Chinaman, elected by his own countrymen, be empowered to act as a petty magistrate; that his jurisdiction shall extend over petty crimes and mining disputes, when both the complainant and defendant are Chinese; that a complete register of all crimes heard before him be kept in Chinese and English; that in case of appeal his decision be subject to the revision of the bench or warden." Another subject is talked upon, viz., the Buckland rowdies. The Chinese were expelled, and, from the remarks of the writer, I believe petitioned for remuneration. In speak-

ing of this he says—"It must be granted, however, that the justice of the petition alone ought to be sufficient reason for making good the damage done by the Buckland rowdies, and so wiping away a part of that stain which must ever, to a greater or less degree, darken the good name which we have sought to earn for loyalty and respect for the law. The Texan gambusine and the Californian lyncher are types which we certainly might have expected to meet in individuals on our gold-fields, but we blush to find a body of some 100 diggers trying to emulate them in their worst excesses, and wantonly maltreating a quiet, inoffensive, and unresisting set of neighbours. In these hurriedly-written remarks we have confined ourselves to rebutting charges made against the Chinese, and to showing that it is neither expedient nor necessary that they should be excluded or expelled. But do not let it be supposed from this that we can find nothing to say in their praise. Any one might talk in the abstract of their good qualities; but we have experienced numerous instances of their fidelity, their gratitude, their respect for law—aye, and of their honesty and individual bearing. Their docility, industry, and sobriety, are admitted by their bitterest enemies; are not these three qualities alone sufficient to constitute them good colonists? The writings of Sir John Davis, Sir George Staunton, Dr. Morrison, and other travellers in China, fully confirm this. I fully agree with the remarks of the writer. "But let us not forget, in the treatment of this question, that we have a wider responsibility than the case of mere local interest. We too often for-

get in our contemplated measures that we have to study those of the mother country. We are too apt to ape a distinct nationality, and to act as if we had an independent existence." I fully concur in the Christian-like manner the author concludes his subject:—"Above all, we too little reflect on the work given us to do by the Great Disposer of events, who has, in his All-wise Providence, seen fit to direct so many Pagans to our shores, and to place us in the position of becoming a powerful agency for the diffusion of a knowledge of His truth. This is always our duty; but in the present instance it would seem we have an especial call to it in the singular fact, that had the treasures of California and Australia been discovered forty or fifty years ago, such was then the segregation of the Chinese from Europeans, and their ignorance of us, that probably not one Chinaman would have gone to either place. Had they heard of it, they would have looked on it as barbarian romance. But these treasures have been reserved for the Anglo-Saxon race, who have ever been the foremost in diffusing civilization and Christianity throughout the world, and have been hidden from the Creation until now, until this favourable moment when they might be instrumental in Christianizing one-third of the human race—for such is the population of China. If we as a people continue guilty of such pride and selfishness, as to refuse our rightful service, or lend our puny opposition to this vast and almost visible design of Providence, we may rest assured that a dire retribution will in some shape or other, sooner or later, fall upon us. We cannot here refrain from saying a word on the disgraceful apathy

of our clergy on this point. The letter of 'Chinaman' in the *Argus* well remarks, that the clergy wink at the most iniquitous and unchristian laws, rather than say one word which may displease 'the powers that be'—always provided that it does not interfere with the loaves and fishes—whether such law be as in the United States, that a man may flog, brand, or mutilate his own nigger; or as here, that as many as possible are to be kept from our shores, where they might get a knowledge of Christianity and civilization to diffuse among their countrymen on their return; and, as a 'Chinaman' further remarks, 'His countrymen are too intelligent not to perceive this glaring inconsistency between the conduct and the professions of the clergy, which gives them a most unfavourable idea of religion.'

"One word in conclusion. Some of our reasoning may be found faulty, but at all events our facts are incontrovertible, and on them we feel safe in leaving the whole question to the judgment of every intelligent and impartial reader."

This pamphlet was published at the time I was at Melbourne. I perhaps ought to apologize to my reader for detaining him so long with matter not my own. A traveller sojourning for a short time only in a strange land must not hesitate to avail himself of the best information he can obtain; and when his own personal observation does not bear upon the subject, I think he stands justified, before all impartial judges, by quoting from others, even in the lengthy manner which I have done upon the present occasion.

The Americans, like the Chinese, have played a very important part at these diggings. It would

be interesting as well as useful to know the number of these near relations of ours. I ascertained that there were 3,000, according to the statistics of a Government official, either at Melbourne or at the diggings. From good though not Government authority I learned there might be 30,000, spread over the length and breadth of the Australian continent. The American merchants in the town of Melbourne I heard well spoken of, not only for activity, but probity, and all the qualities that constitute a respectable merchant. The best coachmen at Melbourne were unquestionably Americans, the latter having got so far ahead of us in this department as to carry everything before them. I have ever advocated the necessity of a strong friendship existing between England and America. Unfortunately, the prejudices among certain classes of both countries run so high as to be a powerful barrier to a good understanding and friendship; but whatever may be the ignorance, and even the willingness of certain classes of both countries not to understand each other, I venture to predict that we shall be friendly in spite of them. The lowest classes of both countries, if such a term is applicable to America, will meet at the diggings, shake hands, and fight out their old prejudices, ending, no doubt, with a nobbler.\* If the untravelled and uneducated Englishman is determined to work himself up in all the notions that belong to his ancestors, why his son will travel the continent of Europe, where some of the best classes of Americans will shake hands with the rising generation of our countrymen. The son

\* A glass of grog.

will return home, and assist the old gentleman, the "governor," to take a new view of the question. I believe this friendship to be one of paramount importance. I believe that the social and political state of the world requires that England and America should go hand in hand, as they were wont to do in days of yore, when we were one and the same people. I believe that despotism as it now exists, brooding with its black and unhealthy and ugly wings over the majority of mankind, requires the strong military and naval forces of both countries to keep it either in check or to annihilate it altogether. And, above all, I believe that the American and English missionaries—those soldiers of the cross—must put on their gospel armour to contend with the leaven of Antichrist, and by so doing shake the foundation-stone of that mighty pagoda, Despotism, until its lofty towers kiss the ground. Thanks to the diggers, both of Australia and California, with all their wickedness, wretchedness, and devilry, which may have contributed towards the furtherance of the mighty and Christian battle.

I shall conclude this imperfect sketch of the diggings with the leading features of the career of a digger, as related by himself, with whom I was well acquainted. The person whose history I am about to relate as a digger, was in every sense of the word a gentleman, both in education and breeding. Taking him altogether, physically, morally, and intellectually, he was a man who ranked far above the average of men. He was one of the most graceful men in manner I almost ever beheld. This, added to a noble figure, remarkable for true symmetry, united to a head and form in perfect



keeping, presented an appearance altogether, whether enveloped in the flannel shirt of the digger, or in the rags of the beggar, that could not fail to attract the attention of all, but especially the well-bred. He looked and acted the gentleman, in spite of every effort he might take to disguise himself. This favoured individual left his native country, where he must have been the idol of those who knew him, from misfortune, partly brought on by his own imprudence, which it is not necessary to relate. In a word, he had all the qualifications for a gentleman, save money. He wished to try his luck at the diggings. I shall very briefly mention the leading phases through which he passed, without dwelling on them at length, otherwise I might occupy the whole of my volume. He went out to Australia, with others, in a ship, where he must have been a favourite, especially with the ladies. He was a foreigner. On his arrival in Australia he found himself all of a sudden at a low public-house, where he got invited to drink with private soldiers, one of whom invited him to his lodgings. Another man, a bystander, who had been listening, overheard his conversation, took him aside, and cautioned him against going home with the soldier. Our hero suspected both parties; like a knowing man, got rid of both, and returned home by himself. As he approached the town of Melbourne four men pounced upon him, throwing him, and instantly searching his pockets, in which they found nothing; for, most luckily and providentially, all his money had got into his boot, having a hole in his pocket. The robbers missed their booty, but were enraged

with their bad luck. One of the scoundrels—most likely the leader—remarked, as he finished ransacking his person, “Well, you know dead men tell no tales. The river is pretty handy. What do you say to his sleeping at the bottom of the Yarra, with the fishes for bedfellows?” “Ay, ay,” reiterated the others, and instantly they performed the act. He, however, being an excellent swimmer, soon found the proper use of his legs, which very instinctively directed him to the opposite side of the river to the robbers. All of a sudden he found himself getting drawn into the current that led to a waterfall, which must have finished him. He contended so valiantly with this new enemy, however, as to reach the opposite shore, and so escape death from the robbers, death by drowning, and death from the cataract or dam. The first job he undertook was working as a common labourer in the streets of Melbourne. Upon this occasion a lady—a real lady—recognized him, and approached him with a blush; she was one of the passengers in the ship that brought him to Australia. This lady left two others to address him, which attracted the attention of the bystanders so much that our hero said to her, “Miss So-and-So, pardon me for suggesting to you the propriety of your quitting me, as I am only a poor digger, and you a fine lady—the eyes of everybody are upon us.” “O! Mr. So-and-So,” said she, “you told me when on board ship you should turn your hand to anything that came first, and what you have asserted, appears to be true;” whereupon she suddenly vanished, leaving the digger to his sober reflections. He

soon got tired of this, and, as a means of subsistence, shot wattle-birds and wild duck, joining two or three other adventurers. One evening, as he was keeping watch outside his tent, he heard the footsteps of a horse, with the accoutrements shaking, indicating the approach of a trooper. The trooper approached the tent without seeing him. He, however, descried the trooper, whom he took for a bushranger. He levelled his gun at the trooper, in case he should advance, ready to blow out his brains; but finding himself unperceived, he let him go without pulling his trigger. The next day they all went wattle and duck shooting; and, as it happened to be Sunday, the troopers came down upon the party, seized our hero as the ringleader of a party of bushrangers, took him before a magistrate, where he proved his innocence, but nevertheless got fined £2 10s. for carrying a gun on a Sunday. He then took to the diggings, in which he had but little success. Here, through good generalship and a knowledge of the world, united to tact, he contrived to get hold of a Government contract, which brought some grist to the mill. The contract having terminated, it became necessary for him to be on the alert, as a hungry stomach requires to be fed in no part of the world sooner than in Australia, where the stimulating climate has a specific effect upon that most useful part of the animal economy. He had recourse to the diggings a second time, which was accompanied with more success, he having realized £200 from the expedition. The work and the life not suiting the intention and bent of the adventurer, he quitted it for one

in close alliance with the above, being a job at ditching, at 2s. 6d. a yard, at which he got on uncommonly well, by digging fifteen yards per diem—thus realizing handsome wages. The ditching job having come to a termination,—for the best of all reasons, as the Irish would express it, because it was finished,—it was necessary now to keep the eye on the *qui vive* in order to find another job. At this particular time he fell in with some agricultural old gentlemen, who gave him a job at felling trees, at so much per tree. He worked at this with some degree of ardour and satisfaction; but unfortunately the trees, like the ditches, were only limited in extent, and thus ended the affair of tree-felling. After this he was engaged to saw timber, in which work he was esteemed a modern genius, from the fact of his introducing a new kind of saw-pit, which quite surprised the faculties of two runaway Dutch sailors, who approached him—as suddenly ran away—whom he pursued and overtook, and soothed in such a manner that when questioned as to their particular calling, one of them exclaimed, “I am the ship’s carpenter.” He hired these sailors at so much per day to help him.

In going to the diggings a second time, accompanied with a dozen foreigners from all lands, heavily armed, they happened to meet the Government escort taking the gold into Melbourne. This party, seeing a number of men bearing arms, instantly gave orders to advance on them with drawn swords, taking them for bushrangers. The troopers approached them with all the attitudes and weapons of warfare all ready for use, with countenances grim as death, ready to conquer or

to die. The troopers advanced, and finding the men not throwing themselves immediately upon the defensive, questioned them as to who they were, and where they came from ; to which questions our hero, speaking English better than the rest, answered as follows :—

“ We are all foreigners, and, hearing that there were bushrangers, we are going to the diggings heavily armed, as you see.”

The troopers glanced at them somewhat suspiciously, and so passed on, not, however, without casting long and lingering looks behind, which were very pertinaciously watched by the foreign corps. To such an extent were the troopers suspicious, that they turned back and followed them for at least a mile and a half. After this the accomplished gentleman tried his hand at keeping a coffee-shop, in which he succeeded so far as giving satisfaction to his customers ; and, having heard so much of English honour and uprightness, he trusted the working-people, who very plainly saw that he was a very good-natured man, and so took care to drink plentifully of his coffee, without paying for it. Most of them, if not all, gave him the slip, without making any payment whatever. This shook his foreign confidence in English honour, as he found it among the working-class of Englishmen. To his coffee establishment he joined the butchering business, which would have told pretty well if his debtors would have paid cash down. In this coffee establishment he had an Englishman for a partner, a married man, whom he esteemed highly, from the fact of his having entered into honourable wedlock, as well as giving him, when required, the society of a lady. He

placed great confidence in his partner, and concerted with him as to the propriety of purchasing the property in which the coffee-house, as well as a number of acres of land that lay contiguous to this renowned establishment. His partner consented, and undertook at the same time to go to the place required, and to effect the purchase in the name of the firm of Messrs. So and So, or A. and B. The English scoundrel went and made the purchase in his own name, thus depriving his fellow-partner of all the benefits accruing from the lands of the renowned coffee-house estate. The scales now began to fall from the eyes of our hero, on hearing the true statement of this land transaction upon authority that could not be doubted. His suspicions were rife and rampant. He believed himself to be in the hands of one whose title was "brigand." Having some gold in his possession, which he had obtained at his second and last diggings, he lost no time in going to his portmanteau, when, to his utter astonishment, he found it had vanished. He charged his partner with the theft, who told him in reply that the child, unknowingly and quite contrary to his knowledge, had in the most purely accidental manner, put its innocent little fingers upon the gold dust. This was quite enough. He resolved to break up the coffee estate and establishment, and take care for the future how he trusted English workmen; and, above all, he took care to fight shy of future partnerships, not only with Englishmen, but with those of other countries. After this he became trooper, when, after serving for some months in the corps, where he seemed to gain the esteem of his fellow-soldiers, he suddenly

quitted that profession for another very nearly allied to it, viz., body-guard to the Governor of New South Wales. Either prior or subsequent to this, meeting one day with a very expert swordsman in one of the very large towns of Australia, they agreed to perform military gymnastic exercises before the public, with the view of picking up a shilling or two, which for a short time succeeded pretty well. This, however, coming to an end, he undertook to personate *tableaux vivants*, for which I should say no man living was more able or better qualified for the performance. Our hero is now a young man, handsome and vigorous, physically and mentally, grown, I think, a little wiser from his multiform experience at the Australian gold-fields. His next trial, after quitting the *tableaux vivants*, was—what do you think?—as veterinary surgeon, with the superintendence of nearly 200 horses. At one period of his life he was without a shilling in his pocket, suffering in his young, noble, and athletic form all the pangs of the most excruciating hunger, in a climate where the atmosphere is strongly stimulating, making its impressions amount to intolerable agony. When in this position he was alone in the wild woods, with a pair of handsome family pistols belted by his side, which reminded him of home, and friends that he had left. He sat down and reflected on his career in the world from first to last. A picture of his family, his home, and his friends of early youth passed in review before him. His career in Australia, in all its variegated and topsy-turvy shapes, passed before the mental eye; and then came the severe reflection, with the pangs of hunger gnawing the sensitive coatings of his empty stomach—

what I might have been, what I am. Here the devil sprang at a noble victim, and tried to catch him. A thought entered his head sudden as the lightning prostrates its victim in the storm. Can I turn bushranger? I am too proud to beg. At this particular crisis his eyes suddenly encountered a bushranger mounted on a tree, eyeing him with all the eagerness of a victim, but, perceiving him well armed, he had not the courage to attack him. The sight of this monster gave the fiend of darkness the answer in the negative. Turn bushranger? No, I will die—I will shoot myself first! So much was he conscience-smitten for having admitted the bad thought into his head, that he gave supernatural power to the villain, who was still following him at a distance. “I believe,” said he, as his eyes glanced upon the brigand, who followed him like a wolf, “that that miscreant knows my thoughts, and would wish me to join him in his pursuit of plunder and murder.”

After Beelzebub baited his hook a second time, very skilfully too, with a nice little bit of proper pride, as some would term it—here his stomach was less agonizing, favouring the bait the fiend had so dexterously thrown to him—beg I cannot, beg I will not; I will sooner die! Here the true light, which ever shines behind the darkest clouds of man’s weary pilgrimage, shone upon him—in other words, he started from his reverie, advanced at a hurried pace, and met with an old friend, to whom he could unbosom his starving condition; who electrified his astonishing faculties with the loan of a five-pound note. My hero is still alive, young, handsome, hale and hearty, as noble a specimen of humanity as I ever met with. I



told him his career contained a great moral. He said, "I am aware of it. I covet," said he, "neither fame, wealth, nor title; my highest ambition now is to earn my bread by the sweat of my brow, and to get no more than I require for daily support, and to obtain no more than I deserve; I wish to accumulate nothing for the storehouse." These diggings are schools where morality is taught in some instances better than either Eton or Rugby, or even Oxford or Cambridge.

## CHAPTER VI.

## VOYAGE FROM MELBOURNE TO NEW ZEALAND.

ON or about the 1st of September, 1857, I found myself on board the "Marchioness" schooner, engaged by the Wellington government to carry the overland route mail to New Zealand. The "Marchioness" had earned an excellent reputation for rapid and safe passages, and was commanded by an extremely agreeable as well as a very intelligent man. We started from Williams-town early one morning, and reached the heads, a distance of forty miles from the town of Melbourne, at 6 o'clock in the evening. Hobson's Bay, or Melbourne Harbour, is more analogous to an inland sea than otherwise. The heads at their entrance are not more than a mile and a half apart. Rocks, many of them sunken, are to be met with at the entrance, with others above the surface, on which the breakers occasionally roar with terrific force. It is here that a tremendous tide-rip\* occasionally may be seen, which happened to be in full force at the time that I went out of the harbour. The wind falling light, and night

\* The term is well known in New Zealand, and especially in Melbourne; I never heard it used in England, although I am informed they exist in the Pentland Forth, and near the

coming on with the heavy tide-rip, to be seen violently dashing over the rocks at the heads, the captain was induced to wait till daylight. The "Essex," bound for England, having accompanied us to the heads, took the lead and went out, and was instantly followed by our captain. As I said before, night was coming on, with scarcely a breath of wind stirring. We got outside, and over the part where we expected the greatest swell, without encountering any amount of sea. Shortly after this I was on deck with all on board, when I perceived a tremendous swell of the ocean, such as may be seen off the Cape of Good Hope in a violent gale, suddenly rear its tremendous proportions. Thinking it would sweep our decks, the captain sang out in a tone of voice but too significant of what was about to happen, "Hold on!" I skulked under the bulwark, fully expecting to be swept overboard, but the great wave passed us without breaking. What rendered it more dangerous still was, that it arose on our beam with her broadside to it, without a breath of air to touch the canvas, and thereby preventing the man at the wheel from steering the vessel. In short, the vessel at the time was perfectly unmanageable. After the wave had passed, another monster mountain of water loomed in the distance, quickly to follow; and after that a third, without

island of Portland, near Weymouth. A tide-rip is caused by a current setting in a certain direction after a gale of wind over perhaps an uneven surface. Although a breath of air be not moving, the ocean presents the appearance of a hard gale. The seas are topped with froth and foam, similar to breakers. This tide-rip is only partial, having local causes for its development.

breaking in the slightest degree. I stared at these waves, no doubt, as a man would at the heavings of an earthquake on the land, and they surprised and alarmed me quite as much. On looking between them I observed the ocean white as if a shower of milk had been rained between them, proving that a few minutes before some of them had broken. In a few minutes after I began fiddling, congratulating myself and others upon a narrow escape from a plunge in the ocean. In less than ten minutes after, the captain, finding the vessel, which was then out of all danger from the tide-rip, gradually drifting with a set of the tide towards the rocks, from having no wind, consulted with the mate what was to be done. They concluded to let go the anchor, though it was just as possible that it might catch the top of a rock, and stop her for a short period. In the middle of this consultation, a light breeze suddenly sprang up, and away we went from rocks and tide-rip, with the full conviction that we had had two very narrow escapes for our lives. Conversing afterwards with the captain upon the subject, he told me that at the time he was consulting with the mate he heard the gay and lively jig from my fiddle: the following thought entered his head—if that gentleman, now giving forth all his soul to the performance of a lively dance-tune was aware of the danger we are now encountering, and the risk we are running, would he not quickly silence his fiddle?

Nothing worthy of notice occurred during the voyage, excepting that when we entered Cook's Straits with a fair wind, and when within a few miles of Wellington harbour, a wind came on in

the opposite direction, a terrific gale, or, as they term it, "a burster but-end first." It nearly laid the poor "Marchioness" on her beam ends. She scudded before it for three or four miles, then laid-to for the night; and the next day, not being able to make Wellington, she landed her mail at Porirua, and thus terminated our voyage.

## CHAPTER VII.

AN EXCURSION FROM WELLINGTON TO QUEEN  
CHARLOTTE'S SOUND.

ONE Saturday evening (September 19th), while enjoying myself as far as practicable in a miserable little room, cheered, however, by the companionship of a wood fire, which produces more blaze than brilliancy, more noise than heat, except that of a temporary nature; when my landlady entered, and hurriedly remarked—

“The captain will sail to-night at ten. Here is the bearer of the message.”

Sail to-night, said I (then indulging in the pleasing thought of retiring to my comfortable bed); then starting from my seat, all traps necessary for the trip were instantly packed up, and the things not required properly secured, half an hour only being allowed for the execution of this business, at all times vexatious, especially when a person is in a hurry, and, above all, when he is anticipating the peaceful slumbers of a feather bed instead of rocking on the ocean. Believe me, gentle reader, I am one of those unfortunate men more easily upset with trifles than the serious events of life. The loss of a fortune, the death of a dear friend, and many other calamitous events that might be enumerated, bring

K

on serious reflection and deep thought without putting me out of humour. If I were the Czar of all the Russias I would take off the heads of all men who neglected to perform trifles well. These little things well attended to form the chief element of enjoyment, at least to me. My annoyance at being called away from a quiet fireside to go to sea may, and I have no doubt will, be ridiculed; nevertheless it was to me, for the time that it lasted, one of the greatest trials of my whole voyage. I may remind the reader that the night was dark, with no gas in the town of Wellington, in whose harbour little tornadoes are almost always blowing. At last, however, I found myself on board a good craft of fifty tons, bound for Queen Charlotte's Sound. We up anchor that evening, with one sailor, myself, and the captain, starting with a head wind. The captain had engaged another sailor, but the rogue, instead of keeping his engagement, had gone off to the diggings. I promised them to bear a hand as well as I could, although I was paying three guineas for a passage of about twenty-seven miles. Next day I had my first lesson in seamanship by being pretty well practised in pulling and hauling, and letting go this, that, and the other. We arrived at the entrance of Queen Charlotte's Sound just in time to be too late for entering, as the wind was against us with a strong ebb-tide. We tacked about and waited until evening, at which time the tide would be in our favour. The wind comes in sudden gusts and squalls from the tops of the mountains and gullies in New Zealand that cannot fail to surprise any one not accustomed to them. One of these carried my cap over the ship's side. I had no

other with me ; the captain had none to give, sell, or lend ; and I was proceeding to one of the wildest parts of New Zealand, where there were neither shops, towns, hotels, or the slightest probability of getting a covering for my head. I said to the captain—

“ If possible you must get me that cap. I can still see it.”

We put about six or seven times without coming sufficiently near to lay hold of it. At last we came upon it ; the sailor tried to hook it, failing in his first trial, but very fortunately succeeding in his second attempt. When within a mile or so of the fine mountainous shore I heard a noise like the report of a gun.

“ What is that ?” said I to the captain.

He replied—

“ That is a blow-hole. Don't you see the water forced into the air, like a whale spouting, there under those rocks, just above the water ? Watch it ; you will see the water first, and afterwards you will hear the report.”

“ Oh, oh,” said I, “ I see it,” and watched it with great interest. “ A blow-hole, why that is a thing I have never seen before.” The philosophy of it is as follows. An orifice exists in the rock, one extremity of which is a little above the surface of the water, with the other exposed to the air : in short, imagine a hole, several feet or yards in length, drilled in the rock from some specific and adequate cause, not dissimilar to that of a gun-barrel. When a wave reaches the lower termination of this channel, the air is violently driven out, and the water spouts into the air as if propelled after the fashion of a fountain. When the



water recedes the air rushes in to fill up the vacuum, and thereby causes a report similar to the firing of a cannon or gun, as the case may be. The report may be heard at the distance of three miles. In misty weather and dark nights the reports of these very singular blow-holes (so termed by the captain) warn the mariner of his approach to the shore, and, besides, enable him to ascertain his whereabouts. Many a captain arriving from Australia and making the land during the moonless nights, approaches the land without being aware of it until the report of one of these natural phenomena salutes his ear, thus enabling him to ascertain the exact bearing of the ship, with an absence of lighthouse, log, latitude and longitude. The entrance to Queen Charlotte's Sound is a very narrow one, and, I presume, that its outlet is pretty much the same. We had a head wind to contend with, which compelled us to beat into it, requiring extreme caution from a very narrow channel beset with numerous and dangerous rocks. The captain of the vessel had a cattle station in the sound, near to which we anchored for the night. I went ashore with him to look at his cattle, where I found him possessed of many excellent and various breeds. He was also the means, I think, of establishing and maintaining the only whale station in Queen Charlotte's Sound. The few inhabitants of the Sound were much indebted to him for the carriage of parcels, letters, and goods. From his having accumulated a little wealth, I have not the slightest doubt that he added another calling to his various employments by acting as their banker, and, most probably, charging them with interest

at a high rate. He was a very intelligent and acute man, half English, half Yankee, as the sequel will show. Visiting his station, he, unfortunately, found that one of his best oxen had fractured its leg just above the ankle. He was anxious to save its life. What was to be done in such a case of emergency? To amputate the leg above the ankle. To work, therefore, he set, accompanied by a native New Zealander, who, when he found the white man in a state of preparation for amputation, took fright at the thought of the operation, and abandoned him at the time when most needed, to the great mortification of the operator.

Great events, it is said, produce great men. Our hero felt himself quite equal to his work. He amputated the leg with a common saw—caught hold of the main artery with a crooked pin—tied it—poured some pitch over the wound, which acted as an artificial flap, and so saved, not only the leg, but the life of his beast, and all, if I understood him correctly, unaided and alone. He further informed me that upon several occasions, during his short voyages in New Zealand, when carrying lady passengers, it had fallen to his lot to act the part of gentleman accoucheur, some four or five times, and that his exertions in that delicate department of the obstetric art had been accompanied with the most signal success.\*

While at anchor off the cattle station it blew so hard that the sailor was afraid that the little boat would have been swamped and sunk, although

\* On glancing at my notes after writing the above, I find that the captain was assisted by a Maori woman, which circumstance renders the story somewhat less heroic.

riding in the most sheltered position possible. Nothing but hurricanes can exceed the violence of these New Zealand winds that blow in the immediate vicinity of mountain ranges, especially when there are numerous gullies or valleys in the neighbourhood, which is a characteristic and decided feature in the physical geography of New Zealand mountains, each valley aiding as a ventilator or funnel for the attraction of the wind.

The next morning we weighed anchor and started for the whale station. Here I spent another day. When I first landed in this locality my nose, which is sluggish and insensible to many odours, here strongly scented the bones and flesh of the many cetaceous monsters whose bodies, cut up into various forms, presented themselves strewn in every direction on the land, in a state of decomposition. The stench was most abominable. It was a grave-yard above ground; agreeable enough to behold when nothing but skeletons were visible, reminding one of the Crystal Palace with some of its paleontological wonders, as there displayed under the able administration of Mr. Hawkins. After remaining here one night I parted with the good captain, and taking a small boat, accompanied by a guide, pursued my journey towards Cloudy Bay or Port Underwood. The day preceding I started with a half-caste boy in a very indifferent boat, with the tide setting strongly against us. Powerful indeed was the current at various parts, accompanied with tide-rips. This trip was rendered not only a difficult, but even a dangerous one. The boy being quite incompetent to make way by his own unaided efforts, I had to put my shoulder to the wheel, or rather my

hands to the oar. Thankful was I that I could use an oar, as but for that our progress would have been impossible. And equally thankful was I for having acquired in early life a knowledge of swimming, as from the appearance and aspect of things, in the shape of sudden gusts of wind from the mountains, strong eddies, and two or three tide rips which we had to encounter, sometimes threatened us with a capsize. Queen Charlotte's Sound is one of the finest harbours in the whole of New Zealand, surrounded with hills, or rather mountains, on all sides, so picturesque that it may fairly be said to surpass the Lago Maggiore in Italy. There is no available extent of land near to it. This is one of the paradoxes of New Zealand, that where there is fine land there are but few or scarcely any good harbours; and where there are fine harbours there is sometimes a very trifling extent, or perhaps no available land whatever. From the information I could gather upon the subject, I learned that not more than four or five individuals occupied this very interesting, romantic, and excellent harbour of New Zealand. Prior to my visit to Queen Charlotte's Sound I fully concurred in the opinion expressed by Mr. Hursthouse, touching the fish of the southern hemisphere, that the majority of it, or the whole of it, was not worth the trouble of masticating. The cod of Queen Charlotte's Sound is a strong exception to this rule, with other fish which abound in its waters. Besides cod, there are seals, trumpeter, moki, barracouta, flounders, skate, and warihau, of some of which the most fastidious gastronomist would only be too happy to make their acquaintance for the first time. When surveying this most beautiful part

of New Zealand, my half-caste boy exclaimed all of a sudden—

“There is my sister’s house at the bottom of that steep hill, where we shall remain for the night!”

Before arriving at his sister’s we encountered two canoes filled with natives engaged in fishing. My young New Zealander was catechized by these savages far too long to be agreeable, especially when the thought came across me that they might plunder and kill me without anybody being the wiser. I therefore said to him—

“Come, let us be off. No more talking.”

I was suspicious enough to believe that myself occupied the greater part of their conversation. At last we reached the residence of the sister of my half-caste companion. Here we were saluted by the barking of four large fat dogs of the bulldog species, who, when they found me in the company of one in whose society they had killed and devoured many a New Zealand pig, they suddenly settled their bristles and became friendly. The mountains here were steep as in many parts of Switzerland, with the little residence of the New Zealand half-caste placed at the foot of the steep mountains, quite near to the edge of the water, whose ripple ever and anon murmured around the solitary residence. This spot bears the name of “Hapawika.” The half-caste woman spoke very good English, received her brother very affectionately, and behaved herself in a very becoming and agreeable manner towards myself. She immediately set to work, cooking for us some wild pig, which was near at hand, having been caught some few days before by the

bull-dogs previously mentioned. Bread-making she commenced, in the following manner:—She took fat, carraway seeds, sugar, and flour, mixed them together, fisted them with a firm hand, and so ended the job. The flavour of the bread was a demi-semi kind of cake, anything but suitable to the salt wild pig. The boy went out for a short time, being hungry, and very quickly returned with a lot of muscles of a most colossal kind, which he instantly put before the fire, for the twofold purpose of opening and cooking. I partook of them and found them excellent. This was a kind of *bonne bouche* for us during the time that the wild pig was boiling and the bread baking in the middle of the wood ashes. The house had no windows; holes in the wall were their substitutes. The house was very simple in regard to its internal divisions. It possessed its kitchen, bedroom, drawing and dining rooms, scullery, &c., all in one, consequently we all slept at one end of this universal room, which occupied the whole of the interior of this simple and curious New Zealand residence. There was no chair; the vertebræ of a whale, however, made a passable substitute. The thing that bore the nearest approximation to the civilization of the white community was a cradle, in which swung her little infant, she being married to an American. Although neither of these half-castes had ever been to school, and were thoroughly incapable of reading and writing, yet they conversed in a manner and style vastly superior to many of the poor people of England who have had the advantage of a little schooling. This fact, I think, strongly portrays the acumen of the native New Zealander, so well

known to every European who has lived amongst them. I asked them, at the time that they were enjoying themselves in playing one of their savage games, which consisted in clapping their hands and muttering a considerable amount of unintelligible jargon, "Whether there was a king or a queen in England;" to which the lady replied, "a king;" she, however, was quickly reprimanded by the boy for her ignorance, by stating, that it was a queen, appealing to me at the same time for the confirmation of the assertion. The girl amused me much with the story of a Scotch girl who pulled off her shoes to walk to church, with a view to economy, and who put them on at the church porch. I said to the recounter of this story, who was the female, "Where is Scotland?" Answer: "Why abreast of Ireland." "And where is Ireland?" "Why abreast of Scotland." Notwithstanding their having received no education whatever, they were capable of counting, adding, and multiplying to a certain extent, quite as well as if they had been at the parish school. I was much amused by the girl presenting me with a document, prior to my departure, certifying that her father was a liberated convict from Van Diemen's land. Thus I had the privilege of being in the company of two individuals whose pedigree was made up of savagism on one side and convictism on the other.

## CHAPTER VIII.

JOURNEY FROM QUEEN CHARLOTTE'S SOUND TO  
CLOUDY BAY AND PORT UNDERWOOD.

THURSDAY, SEPT. 24.—I wished good-bye to the half-caste girl at Hapawika, and was accompanied by her brother as my guide to Cloudy Bay. We rowed some four miles in Queen Charlotte's Sound, left our boat, and commenced the ascent of a hill, steep, and so completely covered with fern and other vegetable matter as to prevent progress until an appeal to the indomitable physical and moral energies was made, in order to rescue the wanderer from leaving his bones upon the ground as a testimony of conquered courage.

The morning was cloudy and rainy with a mist so dense that our course was only discoverable at a very short distance before us. Not a house or habitation, or anything else that gave signs of the presence of either civilized or uncivilized man, was to be seen. We had no road, no path—with the fern, high as ourselves, to beat through for the first time. We were our own pioneers in a part perhaps never previously trod by any other human beings but ourselves. At last, with a good deal of exertion, and unusual fatigue, rendered more



difficult, from the rain and slippery condition of the ground, we reached the summit of a high mountain, heavily timbered, where we fell in with a beaten track, and then commenced our descent to Cloudy Bay. Our descent was a very rapid and slippery one, from the circumstance of our having a clay road—and, in my own case, a pair of excellent Medwin boots, unfortunately without nails. At last, after a good deal of slipping and sliding, which not unfrequently brought us to *terra firma*, we reached the foot of the mountain, at one end of Cloudy Bay. Our road to the next house, where we were to be lodged for the night, was one of nature's, being the base of the steep mountains which formed the line of the New Zealand coast. When we arrived at the foot of the hill, whose base was washed by the sea, we found it high water, which precluded the possibility for the time being of our making further progress. The rain at that time was falling in torrents. We were bounded on one side by the dark, misty, and sombre-looking mountains; and on the other by the sea, whose waters washed close up to their base, rendering further progress perfectly impracticable unless we had been provided either with the qualities of the bird or the fish—a condition at that time most desirable. Here we had to wait at least two hours, enduring a deluge of rain at a time when refreshment and a fire would have been duly appreciated. Here we suffered the pangs of hunger without being able to appease the appetite. I amused myself with pacing up and down, like a sentry, occasionally taking a slight sip at a little brandy-bottle that I most fortunately had in my

pocket. My companion and guide fell fast asleep by the side of a tree, where he lay perfectly insensible to the pitiless wind and rain which beat upon his person, which had rendered him as thoroughly dripping wet as if he had just returned from a two weeks' visit to the inhabitants of the briny deep. Never in my life did I so much prize that insensible and refreshing power which renders us oblivious and dead to the passing and painful events of the storm, then raging in all its direful fury. I both envied and pitied the boy.

After waiting our time the tide at last receded sufficiently to enable us to pursue our way to the next and only house to be found in this almost uninhabited and thoroughly wild part of New Zealand. We now ascertained from careful observation that the tide had ebbed to the lowest point. We started at the foot of these mountains, which in many senses are as steep as the side of a house, along the coast of New Zealand, ankle-deep in water, scrambling over trees that lay strewn upon the ground in such a manner as to intercept our way—laying hold occasionally of some portion of a tree, which frequently gave way, sending us helter-skelter into the water, and at the same time threatening us with a land-slip from the looseness of the soil in which it grew.

At last we came to a point where it was completely impossible to proceed any further—the breakers were washing and tumbling right up to the base of the steep mountain's side. Three of the greatest bugbears which have terrified people in Britain from emigrating to New Zealand have been the natives, the fearful winds, and the earthquakes. The natives (some of them)

are quite as serviceable to the country as the settlers, and are perfectly quiet if well managed. The winds, which 'blow through Cook's Straits, are nearly always in two directions, thus enabling the mariner to scud either one way or the other ; and, as there are no shoals, the risk of getting ashore is comparatively small, and seldom happens. The earthquakes have been as beneficial to the country as the emigrants, and more so, for they have made good roads without charge, by elevating the seashore, which, at low water, washes the bases of many of the mountains of the coast line, where none but birds and fishes could contrive to subsist. The rivers have drowned more than a hundred—the earthquakes have only killed a single individual, and he was a cripple. A little earthquake action on the foot of this mountain would have enabled us to have pursued our journey without interruption. I chided my guide for his ignorance of the country, at which he felt somewhat of his own unimportance and insignificance, when I began to compassionate him.

Here we had to retrace our steps for at least two miles with craving appetites, and a very slight supply of brandy, to the foot of a high mountain, where there was a beaten track so excessively slippery that at one or two points I had to lie down panting like a hare hotly pursued by the harriers, holding on at the same time with my hands to prevent myself being hurled headlong into the ravine below. I was, during the greater part of the ascent, literally turned into a quadruped by being on all fours, crawling on my hands and knees like an unwieldy and excessively clumsy monkey.

This was tough work, from the fact of the road being as slippery as if a shower of grease and oil had fallen on it, with my shoes without nails in them, rendering walking impossible; sliding, slipping, tumbling, and stumbling being the only practicable method of making the ascent. At last, after contending with a world of difficulty, we reached the summit of this mountain, which, if it had really been a mixture of oil and grease could not have baffled our efforts more than it did. We commenced our descent over a surface somewhat different, inasmuch as we had to pass through wood and scrub. Here our false steps were as numerous as ever, and the many accidental kicks dealt out to the tree stumps, soon told us who could play longest at that game—it being too palpable that Medwin's leather stood but little chance of beating them. After undergoing some two hours of slipping, sliding, thumping, and kicking the tree stumps, we at last reached the house to which we were anxiously wending our way. My guide exclaimed—

“I wonder if the black man is at home: if not we shall have to sleep out of doors, and that, too, without any refreshment, after twelve hours' walk in the New Zealand mountains.”

This reflection sank deeper into my poor empty stomach rather than into my heart. A person once facetiously remarked that every man carried with him two consciences, one of which resided in the stomach. This stomachal conscience of mine was highly sensitive on hearing this melancholy remark of my guide. We now had a view of the little hut, surrounded with its little patches of cultivation, situated in a flat surrounded on

three sides by some of the most magnificently timbered hills I ever beheld. Cloudy Bay or Port Underwood fully realizes its first name. It is one large bay consisting of a series of minor ones, forming a coast line presenting on all sides mountains, where goats alone could dwell, and where there is but little land available for cultivation. We at last reached the little hut, and there found, to our great joy and satisfaction, that the lady of the mansion was at home. She was a native of New Zealand, married to a man whose mother was a Red Indian, and whose father was an African nigger. The man was from home in his canoe. My half-caste guide was quite at home, and on my urging him to set about asking for something to eat in came the husband, who most cordially shook me with his hand as black as a coal, with a face of the same complexion, and with eyes that glistened like jewels. Yes, gentle reader, I was then in the company of two individuals whose blood contained the savageism of three distinct races, in a miserable little cottage, in one of the dirtiest days, and in one of the dirtiest countries for the time being, I ever beheld. The attention and hospitality that I received from these poor people made me solemnly feel the truth and beauty of the Scriptural declaration, that God has made of one blood all the nations of the earth. After sitting for awhile and getting a good repast, which I think consisted of wild pig as usual, with some capital potatoes, finishing with a pipe, I sallied out to look about this very romantic residence. On one side were mountains magnificently timbered to their very summits with skeleton trees, stripped of their bark by fire, standing like ghosts

in the centre of the thick umbrageous forest, in many cases mingled with patches as black as night, where the fire had devoured its vegetable victims. Beneath this was a flat filled with fern flags, rushes, and other plants, mingled with shrubs and brushwood, bounding the little patches of cultivation, where might be seen apple, gooseberry, and peach trees, in full blossom, with a good supply of culinary herbs.

Within a few yards of the front door was the water of the ocean, gently rippling with its almost motionless waves a flat sandy beach; while on the opposite side stood the majestic mountains, rising almost perpendicularly out of the water, with their summits not bathed in ethereal blue in a glorious sunlit sky, but enveloped in clouds of such a cast, colour, and aspect, as seemed to threaten a second and an everlasting deluge.

"Truly," said I, "this is indeed Cloudy Bay."

The name of this detached and peculiarly situated little hut was laughably singular, inasmuch as it bore the designation of Hahahaka.

After amusing myself with the appearance of things out of doors, I stepped into the house to make some observations. I found the top of the chimney-piece level with the roof, which is, I think, somewhat exceptional. The chimney, instead of forming an integral and uniform portion of the building, stood out as an adjunct or out-house. This I thought very singular. The windows were nothing more than what medical men term a solution of continuity; or, in other words, avoiding technicalities and adopting plain speaking, holes in the walls. The roof, like that

of a barn, was visible from the interior, from the rafters of which hung sickles, baskets, heads of Indian corn, bacon, knives, shears, and a razor. The sleeping apartment was separated by a wall, which terminated half way between the roof and the floor. On the top of this wall dangled several clothes belonging to the lady of the establishment, the whole summit appearing to be a substitute for bonnet boxes and portmanteaus. As usual, there were no chairs, a long form being the only substitute. The door to the apartment was made of three pieces of plank, so badly joined that a finger might have been placed between them. The floor consisted of *terra firma*, covered with logs of wood, teapots, wooden casks, kettles, and a nail-box. There was an imitation of a cupboard, placed at the top of which were some preserves, and probably pickles. Lower down was a plate-rack scantily furnished, beneath which in a corner were hoes, hatchets, and other articles too numerous to mention. Across the chimney extended a spar, on which were suspended pot-hooks and damp clothes waiting to be dried. The animals comprised four cats, a few goats, numerous ducks and geese, cocks and hens, with *et ceteras*.

The following day I quitted this residence of the black man for Mrs. Guard's, situated at the bottom of the next little bay. I have said before that a series of little bays, very beautiful ones too, nearly encircle Cloudy Bay. In other words, it is a compound bay formed of numerous baylets.

The black man very kindly offered his canoe and his services to conduct me to the next habitation, situated at a distance of three miles. Such

is the nature of the coast of New Zealand in that region, that a journey from one part of the sea-coast to another is not possible, as the water never recedes sufficiently from the bottom of the mountains. There is, therefore, no other alternative but boating it. I got into the canoe for the first time in my life with all caution. It seemed to me as if half-a-pound weight of flesh more on one side than another might be sufficient to capsize the affair, rendering it somewhat of a difficulty for those who do not happen to be symmetrically constructed to sail in an affair of this description. I am glad to say, however, that after entrusting myself for a distance of three miles in Cloudy Bay, where I sat as still as a mouse, I got safely landed at Mrs. Guard's. This place was kept by a disgraceful, drunken woman, who saluted me with all that wild fury and devilry which only occasionally belongs to the lion and the tiger of the dismal jungle, when mad with the pangs of hunger, in search of a victim. Such was Mrs. Guard, who kept a public house in Cloudy Bay. I had the greatest possible difficulty in getting out of the clutches of this drunken, degraded, and most miserably-fallen woman.

Here I left my half-caste New Zealand guide, and started, accompanied part of the way by the black man, to Mr. Aldridge's, where good and comfortable accommodations may be had. I spent two nights with Mr. Aldridge, who informed me that there were three mountains to ascend before I arrived at the Wairau—a plain, flat, and in some parts a boggy district, lying between two of the finest mountain ranges I have seen in New



Zealand. I was more afraid of attacking these mountains on my way to the Wairau, from my having heard that all that I had previously endured was in point of difficulty nothing in comparison with that part of New Zealand. When I mentioned this to Mr. Aldridge, he said, "Don't you be alarmed ; it is not so bad as people say." I told him I had a great horror of the undertaking, from the fact of having lost my way upon many occasions, especially when silly settlers had expressed an opinion that it was impossible to get lost. I told him whenever any of these stupid New Zealand settlers tell me I cannot get lost I am sure to lose my way and encounter many intricacies which none but an old colonist could possibly unravel. He said, "Don't you be alarmed ; sooner than you shall lose your way, I will accompany you the whole of the distance myself. And if the wind change to-morrow morning I will put you into my whale-boat—land you in White's Bay, where you will then only have one hill to ascend."

I was quite charmed with meeting with such a noble-minded fellow after the many hardships I had previously endured, and the more especially when I contrasted his manners and kindness of disposition with the female tigress whom I had met with the day before.

When we arose betimes the next morning, I was too glad to find that the wind was favourable, thereby avoiding the ascent of two of the most difficult mountains in my route. It was with no small satisfaction that I lent a hand to pull a first-rate whale-boat to the water's edge, in doing which I stumbled and fell, and by so doing smashed to

atoms a little brandy-flask filled with brandy. This, which would have been a trivial circumstance in England, was a most momentous affair when another was not to be had for love or money, and the loss was doubly serious, especially as the New Zealand water at all times tended to derange the intestinal canal in the shape of chronic diarrhoea, an attack of which I was then, and had been, labouring under ever since my first arrival in the country; and the worst of it was that I had to proceed some forty miles farther on foot unprovided with the only remedy for that complaint, viz., brandy-and-water.

I was much surprised at the sudden puffs of wind that seized the whale-boat, nearly laying her on her beam-ends, from the many valleys and gullies ashore. I continually shouted out at the top of my voice, "Hallo! what now?" "All right, sir," answered the old whaler, "nothing to be afraid of."

We passed two or three pretty little bays, then sighted the Wairau plain, and very quickly entered White's Bay, a small and inconsiderable nook, slightly protected from the ocean swell by a projecting rock, a few hundred yards off the Wairau plain, where I required to land. The surf was then too high to pass through, and consequently I had to ascend a mountain which took me a good half-hour to get over, when a few strokes of the oar would have landed me. This was provoking. My friend and companion, Mr. Aldridge, fearing a gale from the south-east, which would have rendered his return somewhat perilous, remarked to me before landing, "There is the mountain, and there is the road just under that bush where it

turns to the right," before entering some other part that was plain enough to himself.

I said, "My dear sir, I can see what you describe, but, from much experience in climbing mountains, I know that paths when viewed from the valley below become very intricate and difficult to find, from a variety of causes too numerous to mention, when you enter them for the first time without a guide; so do accompany me, and save me much anxiety, turmoil, and exertion."

"Well," said he, "I'll see you safe over it."

I wished good-bye to an old American whaler, and another companion whom we left to guard the boat, while Mr. Aldridge marched in front of me over the mountain. I soon found that he was one of the most expert and clever men as a pedestrian I had ever met with. I was much slower, and required to crawl over several parts that he walked over as nimbly as an antelope. I was satisfied that I could not have found the way alone without making a shocking bungle of it, in making the descent into the Wairau plain, which lay beneath us on one side, while the wild waves of the Pacific were breaking on the other.

Upon one occasion I made a false step, which, if I had not recovered myself, must have precipitated me headlong into the middle of the roaring breakers that then washed the bottom of this steep and dangerous mountain. Fortunately I recovered myself by violently striking my shin-bone against the edge of a sharp rock, which regularly excavated a portion of the flesh quite close to the bone, that has left a large black mark to remain a memento of that day's

operation until the tomb closes over my mortal remains. Mr. Aldridge carried a railway-wrapper, containing a few things necessary for the trip, which, when within a few strides of the foot of the mountain, he threw down, exclaiming—

“Your bundle is in the plain before you, sir.”

I did the same with my stick, and something else that I carried, by way of rejoicing. I now had to part with this worthy and excellent man. I did not know how to remunerate him as he was a landed proprietor and well to do in the world. I had recourse to an expedient which I trusted might not be offensive. I had in my pocket ten or twelve shillings mixed with as many sovereigns; I pulled both out together, and spread them out in the hollow of my hand, saying—

“Help yourself to whatever you may fancy, regardless of myself as present proprietor.”

To which he nobly replied—

“I shall take nothing for myself, but as you are so good as to make me an offer, I will accept one of these sovereigns, to give one-half to the old whaler and the other to the boy.”

After giving me some directions I quitted this admirable fellow with a promise that, if I were spared to return to England, I should forward him a copy of “A Gallop to the Antipodes.” The Wairau plain of New Zealand is connected with, and forms one of the most valuable parts of, the Nelson Settlement, being the great pastoral district from whence nearly the whole of the wool is exported to the London market. That portion of it over which I passed, after leaving my friend at White’s Bay, well deserves the attention of the naturalist and geologist. My course lay within a

few hundred yards of the sea beach, where the waves of the ocean beat almost at all times with great violence along the shingly and arid shore. This plain is about ten or twelve miles broad; boggy in one part, with all the characteristic vegetation; arid as the desert in others; while a river and various lagoons or lakes occupy the remainder of this very remarkable district. I speak of its aspect near to the ocean; it possesses quite an opposite character in other parts. This peculiar district is bounded on two sides by ranges of mountains which for sublimity and grandeur, although by no means the loftiest in the country, cannot fail to make a deep impression upon the pedestrian. In the year 1856 I passed over many of the most romantic and sublime parts of Switzerland, and I may assert, according to my own judgment, that during that tour I saw nothing that impressed me more deeply than what may be seen in the Wairau plain of New Zealand.

Finding the shingle somewhat disagreeable, I turned off a little to the right, leaving the musical roar of the waves of the ocean for the neighbourhood of a swamp, where I found flowers, insects, and birds quite peculiar to that locality. In the centre of this valley were some houses placed at the mouth of the Wairau river, just where it empties itself into the ocean. My destination was to reach Mr. Bowle's hotel which formed part of this group. I came very near to a mass of water, which was either some portion of a lake or river which ran parallel to the sea beach. I marched between this and the sea until all of a sudden the river turned at a right angle almost intercepting my route, but instead of running down to the

ocean ended in a *cul de sac*, round which I passed within a very few yards of the surf. A kind of bog still presented itself to my right; on my left was the sea; before me were the houses, apparently so placed as to induce me to believe that no impediment in the shape of water could possibly cut off my communication with them.

I proceeded farther, and at last came to the mouth of the river, where the tide had advanced into the bay, so as to cut off all communication with three or four houses on my right hand, while the river lay between Mr. Bowle's house and me. In short, I was surrounded by the tide of the ocean on all sides, except that narrow neck of land on which I stood, with three houses on the other side of the bay, all within hearing. I commenced shouting most lustily, and at last, not without continued and reiterated efforts, did I succeed in making them hear. I concluded the houses were empty, or else that all the inmates were deaf. When a man's life is endangered, every minute consists of several thousand seconds instead of sixty. My bellowings, however, at last reached the ears of the landlord of the hotel, who, seeing my difficulty, pushed over his boat and came to my rescue. When arrived on the other side of the river, I found the dinner ready, well-thronged with a motley group of mortals, some of whom had evidently been well-bred men, others whose rank in life belonged to the working classes, with sailors to boot—all mingled together in a mass, pegging away at a haunch of mutton, placed upon the bare table. This would appear somewhat uncouth to English ears, accustomed only to civilized life. In the colonies it is no rarity.

I soon joined them, not forgetting to swallow two glasses of brandy-and-water to alleviate the excessive thirst induced from the loss of my flask, as well as from my hard day's work. I remained with them all night, talking and chatting with most of them, gentle and simple, the well-informed and the ignorant, gentlemen and working men—all forming one body, claiming perfect equality without the slightest distinction whatever. Such is colonial life.

## CHAPTER IX.

JOURNEY FROM THE WAIRAU TO GIGGERIGOO  
SHEEP STATION.

On the day following, the 27th of September, I proceeded on my journey through the remainder of the Wairau. I had about five miles of flat country to walk over, where a most singular track of country is approached, that forms the boundary of this peculiar New Zealand plain. This part is called the Bluff. That part of it next the sea terminates as abruptly as if it had been quarried by the hand of man, rising to a height varying, perhaps, from 200 or 300 feet to 500 or 600 in height. The stone of which it is composed looks as fresh as if it had been literally and recently quarried. The waters of the ocean break at the foot of this very romantic sea cliff, leaving at low water scarcely a sufficiency of road to enable the foot passenger to escape a good wetting. Nevertheless, the foot of this bluff, which forms the sea beach, is used as a common road, and the only one, not only for foot passengers, but for horsemen and drays. Some years ago I rode along it at the time that the waves were beating violently on the beach, at many parts scarcely allowing an interval of land sufficiently broad for



a bird to settle upon without getting sprinkled with the water.

Nothing can be more romantic and majestic than the wild waves of the ocean roaring up to the foot of these perpendicular mountains. The traveller is threatened with danger from two sources—the waves on one side, and the leaning cliffs on the other. At the time that I approached this part, I was quite uncertain as to the state of the tide. To make sure, as far as human forethought can calculate, I determined to avoid it altogether, by crossing over their summits, as I had no guide, thereby running no risk of either being drowned or knocked on the head by a land-slip, both of which may occur to the unwary traveller. In passing over this ridge of low mountains, I was much struck with its vegetation, as well as its physical aspect. Not a tree, shrub, or flower were perceptible on its surface. Two distinct species of grass appeared to be the only vegetable occupants of its lonely and rugged surface, with very slight exceptions, and with one species of bird, somewhat analogous to the lark.

The mountains of New Zealand have a peculiarity of shape which I have never seen in any other part of the world. This singular feature consists in part from numerous spurs which branch off in every possible direction, in such a manner that any one unacquainted with the circumstance, invariably loses himself; in short, these twisted and ever-varying offshoots of the mountains form a complete labyrinth in which some of the oldest settlers occasionally lose themselves. Nothing can be more wonderful, and beautiful too, when the rays of the setting or rising sun catch the

tops of these many-shaped ridges and valleys, exhibiting their various surfaces in every possible manner and form, in strong relief under the clear and sometimes cloudless sky that bathes the summits of these very eccentric mountains.

I marched over the tops of these bluff hills, covered with their unusual coating of grass, brown as a haystack, without a single patch of verdure, forming one of the most singular as well as the most interesting localities I ever remember to have visited; not a tree, not a shrub, scarcely a flower, interrupted the wild monotony that spread itself over the surface of this wilderness of grass. The plain of the Wairau, as it exists near to the sea, with its mass of boulders and shingly beach, its lagoons, lakes, and rivers, and swamps, with the various tribes of wading birds, and its patches of verdure, render it especially interesting both to the botanist and zoologist.

The mountains in Queen Charlotte's Sound, previously described, bounding it on one side with densely wooded sides and summits, stand out as objects of the most striking contrariety. The bold sea bluffs, with its monotony of grass, taken altogether, form one of the most strange and striking districts I ever witnessed in any part of the world. These three different parts are all to be found within the space of twenty or thirty miles. Whether the traveller looks at their physical geography, their botany or zoology, with their strange contrasts thus observable, he cannot fail to remark that they seem to be the characteristics of three distinct regions of the globe rather than component parts of one country. In passing over the bluffs I met with the south-eastern wind, which

blew with such violence as to compel me to lie down to save myself being blown into some of the gullies below me. Travellers in journeying over them are frequently lost, and have to wander through the night until Sol rises in all his glory to light them to their true destination. I was aware of this, and took good care to persuade an old shepherd, at whose hut I partook of an excellent repast, to convoy me over the most difficult part. After he quitted me, assuring me that I could not mistake my way, I had many misgivings as to whether I was on the right road. At last I espied a little cottage, surrounded with its patches of cultivation, in the plain below, which was the signal of hospitality and entertainment for the night. I bounded down the hill like an antelope, and at last arrived at a part so steep that I had a world of difficulty in making the descent. With no end of scrambling, slipping, tumbling, kicking, and sliding, I at last reached the foot of the hill. After that I was not long before I was seated by the side of a cheerful wood fire, in a snug little sheep station, where a female superintended household affairs, and who placed before me tea, mutton, and bread, the usual way of entertainment to be met with at a New Zealand sheep station. I remained with them for the night, amusing them, as well as I could, with my travelling experiences and adventures in various parts of the world.

The next morning, September 28th, I started with a shepherd with his horse to put me over the river Awatere. These New Zealand rivers may be ranked among the most dangerous and fearful things belonging to the country. I believe

that a hundred lives have been sacrificed in these furious rivers, many of whom were the leading men of the various settlements. The rapidity with which the water flows in channels intercepted with masses of rocks, large boulders, and shingly beds, all varying in height so as to form a bottom made up of extreme irregularities, with its channel, in many cases, quite near to mountains whose sides send the rain tumbling in torrents into the bed of the river, altogether forming obstacles to the party fording such as, perhaps, cannot be met with in any other part of the world. The earthquakes of New Zealand, which terrify the most stout-hearted, have killed only one individual; its rivers have slain its scores. Such is the rapidity of the stream, that many a man while reining his horse, which involves the necessity of his giving an occasional glance at the water, has been seized by dizziness and hurled headlong into the water as if the rider had been struck by a cannon-ball. The river Awatere is very difficult to ford, in consequence of the muddiness of the stream. At last we approached it, and selected a part for the ford. We had but one horse between us, the shepherd's, a circumstance which involved the necessity of the horse getting back after I had ridden him over. To effect this we attached a long rope round his neck, hastily made of New Zealand flax, sufficiently long to reach across the water; while the shepherd, at the time that I forded the river, held the other end of the rope wherewith to pull the horse back again. I mounted, and at the first dash into the stream got into a hole which brought the water up to my

ankles. I glanced at the stream which was running with a rapidity that must have made me dizzy as a goose if I had not instantly looked above it. I then fixed my eye on the opposite bank of the river, but it also moved in a manner far too rapid to be agreeable. I was aware of the danger, and, through a merciful Providence, had moral courage enough, through the force of imagination, to conceive myself, for the time being, not in a river; and by reiterating the words "I am not in a river," at the same time holding my head as erect as possible, staring at the heavens, and avoiding the sight even of the opposite bank, I was enabled to keep my seat. The principal difficulty, however, consisted in managing the horse, in taking care that the rope and the bridle-reins were not entangled, and also seeing that I was steering in the right direction, to make use of a nautical phrase. This compelled me, as a matter of course, to look at my horse's head, which I did as quick as lightning, giving the cut supreme to the murderous water right and left of me. How I managed I know not; but I did it. I can well conceive that the expression of the eye at that particular juncture must have approximated somewhat to a magnificent squint, ranging from a sublime conception of a watery grave—at the same time stimulated with the delightful thought of being safely landed. I was lucky enough to land on the opposite side ankle-deep in water, in consequence of the tether not being sufficiently long to allow further progress. I dismounted with no small satisfaction. To be snatched from a watery grave, partly, perhaps, through good self-command,

carries with it a degree of triumph which tickles the vanity and makes a man fancy himself a semi-hero. I felt that I had earned a little laurel, but one, alas, whose glories quickly faded, as the sequel will show.

I walked with a firm foot toward the bank of the river, which was as steep as a house side ; in approaching it I suddenly found my feet sinking rapidly, and had a narrow escape from being swallowed in a quicksand. I retraced my steps, after extricating myself, having fully determined to abandon the attempt to scale the bank in that quarter. I then took to the right, when a stream of water began to widen to such a degree as to require a horse to ford it, and not being provided with one, this second attempt, like the first, was another failure. I had, therefore, no alternative but to return to that part where I made the first attempt, cautiously avoiding the quicksand. I succeeded in reaching the bank a second time, which, as I have said before, was as steep as the side of a house ; here I laid hold of a bunch of fibrous roots, which gave way, bringing down upon me a heavy mass of stones and soil which might have smothered me in its fall had I not by great personal exertion extricated myself. My guide who was watching me on the other side without being able to assist me or make any suggestion for my relief, must have had a heavy conscience, having committed a great mistake in taking me to a part of the river where, in the first dash, I went into a deep hole instead of a shallow ford. What his feelings were I know not, as I never saw him again. I, after a short respite, being somewhat disheartened, looked

M

about me once again, for a more favourable spot. Mounting the bank a second time I, by laying hold of a small root, was enabled to ascend to the top of the bank, when I congratulated myself on the narrow escape I had had from being smothered, drowned, and engulfed in a quicksand. At this moment the dirty laurel fell from my brow, which a short time before had induced me to indulge in a little self-laudation. I felt that I had been in the hands of a great and good Almighty superintending Power, and to Him alone I ascribed my victory over a premature death from a quicksand, death from drowning, and death from a landslip. After this I marched forward into a wilderness of grass, consisting of two kinds—the one short, green, and succulent; the other composed of large long tussocks, from one to two feet in height, presenting the aspect of bunches of hay, being perfectly brown, and containing but little juice. I passed this flat district where the latter kind of grass, for many miles, looked more like a desert than a prairie, from the fact of the young grass being perfectly invisible. When the wind blows, these long brown bunches of grass are curiously agitated by the wind, presenting an appearance of a most peculiar and interesting nature. This district of fertility, in the distance, looks more like the waste howling wilderness. I fell in with neither trees, shrubs, flowers, nor any other kind of vegetation. The only instance of animal life I beheld was a little bird that, occasionally flew out of the grass, faintly resembling the lark. After a walk of half an hour I came to Mr. Robinson's sheep station, where I remained for the

night. The next day I wandered over the same style of country, with the difference that the ground was more undulating. I had a good walk of at least sixteen miles in a wilderness of grass, the greater part of which was without a guide. In the afternoon of the same day I reached Flaxbourne sheep station, the property of Messrs. Wild and Clifford, two of the wool-trading, wealthy aristocratic, pioneer-settlers of the New Zealand colony. At the time that I arrived it was the middle of the clipping or shearing season, which afforded me the opportunity of seeing one of the finest flocks of the merino breed to be found in the whole country. I was much pleased to find many of the characteristics, as well as some of the luxuries, of a gentleman's residence as it may be found on the soil of old England. This is a great treat, after visiting the many shepherds' huts to be found at the sheep stations. The pretty residence at Flaxbourne, in the middle of a wilderness, with its neat garden, trees, shrubs, and flowers, cannot fail to be duly appreciated by the wanderer when he steps over its threshold to partake of the hospitality which is there dealt out to all sorts of travellers. The poorest man in the country (even if in rags, a thing by the bye never seen in the colonies) would have bed and board for the night, and as much attention as he required to make him thoroughly comfortable.

Flaxbourne is about fifteen miles from Cape Campbell on the middle island. The day after, I proceeded to Giggeregoo sheep-station, the property of Mr. Trolon and his partner. Here, through the kindness of Mr. Harris, of Flaxbourne,



I got the loan of a horse and a guide for the first five miles. This ride is one of the most romantic possible. Hills and mountains, that reach to the heavens, frown upon the traveller on one side, while the waves of the ocean roar like thunder on the other, in some cases scarcely allowing room for the equestrian to proceed. I remained here for a couple of days. Mr. Trolon gave me a mount on one of his excellent horses, accompanied by a guide, who safely convoyed me to the Warrau, at which place I embarked the same day for the town of Nelson.

## CHAPTER X.

## FROM THE WAIRAU TO THE TOWN OF NELSON.

STEPPING on board the Nelson steamer, a snug little craft, we rattled away for the destined port at a pretty good pace. The wind being ahead we went through the Trench pass, quite near to the coast, which is so narrow that a vessel can only just pass when steered by an able and dexterous seaman. In a few hours we sighted the pretty little town of Nelson, in which I take some interest, from the fact of being one of its original fathers. On approaching the harbour, which is formed by a boulder bank, with a very narrow entrance, studded with rocks, we had some difficulty, as the sequel will show, before we put out our anchor, after a very narrow escape for our lives. At the time that we arrived at the entrance of the harbour an unusually strong ebb-tide was flowing out with such force that, notwithstanding our having a gale of wind in our favour, we were unable to make the entrance. In backing out the steamer struck with great violence on the rocks, heeling over in such a manner as to threaten us with an immediate capsize and consequent precipitation into the water. I, with several others, ran to one side of the vessel, laying my hands at

the same time on my coat, that I might be ready to part with it, should circumstances require me to swim for my life. Here we were fixed immoveably for a few minutes, expecting to be knocked to pieces, when all of a sudden the vessel righted by sliding off into deep water, and so backed out of it, narrowly escaping a huge rock not more than forty yards distant, which must either have smashed her to atoms or else very quickly have capsized her. The pilot was not then on board, but he was soon with us ; half of the town of Nelson being soon on the spot. After congratulating us on our narrow escape, he, at the expiration of an hour and a half, carried the little steamer, but with great difficulty, into port. It was touch-and-go with us the second time, as we were upon the very verge of being carried away by the current, at which critical period the pilot gave orders for the foresail to be set, which arrested her from going backwards, and which enabled us to get inside the harbour without being seriously damaged, but not without being dreadfully frightened. The captain of a coaster, who happened to be on board, was nearly frantic, pacing the deck like a wild man. He got well laughed at for his cowardice.

#### THE TOWN OF NELSON.

Arriving at Nelson on a Sunday, I had an opportunity of attending Divine service in the Episcopalian church, which was only begun when I left the town in the year 1851. This sacred edifice stands on a high hill in the centre of the town. It

is built of wood, plain, and simple, and unpretending, in both its external architecture and internal arrangements, being what may be termed *par excellence* a colonial church—meaning one that is bereft of all elaborate workmanship, and not possessed of that nicety of finish which is observable in similar edifices belonging to the old country. It had a harmonium instead of an organ. The college, which was not begun at the date of my former visit, I found finished and replete with masters, scholars, and the other *et ceteras* connected with the establishment. £25,000 was granted for the erection of the college, and £300 for scholarships and exhibitions. Every householder in the Nelson settlement pays a tax of one pound for educational purposes. The Government grant in the year 1856 was £1,500 for the education of the people. Every child, from six years and upwards, claims the right of being educated by virtue of the tax, with an additional trifling payment, made monthly or annually. This entitles the child to a good common education. I was rather startled to find, on paying a visit to one of these establishments in the country, that religion was only recently taught. The teacher, on being questioned, referred this state of things to infidelity, which he believed to be rather predominant in the colony. Several very handsome and expensive houses have been erected since my last visit, some of them quite calculated for the residence of the *haut ton*. In one of the valleys, remarkable for its steepness, I found many new houses right and left, with enclosures well fenced, which, when planted with trees and other methods of ornamentation, will form, without any exaggeration,

one of the most picturesque and beautiful parts of the world, not excepting any part of the romantic Switzerland. The majority of the people of Nelson, however, are chargeable with a great fault, which, I think, an unpardonable one, viz., that of having neglected to plant trees around the many lovely villas, cottages, and mansions which go to constitute the town. I am happy to say that some of the settlers have begun in earnest. Taking the buildings of the town as a sum total, they are prettier on the whole and better constructed than most other towns that I have seen either in Australia or New Zealand.

Having engaged to breakfast with a friend at a very early hour one morning, I was very much struck, as I walked along, with the appearance of the shops, all being without shutters, presenting to the eye all their contents, with a ready access—the glass being the only barrier between the thief and the goods in the shop. I should imagine that a case of shop-robbery has not occurred from the foundation of the colony up to the present date. In making a short excursion into the Wairau, I observed small houses and neat wooden cottages in every direction, situated on lands which, at the time I had paid it a visit, were considered too poor to be available for either pastoral or agricultural purposes. Many of the apple-trees were thoroughly blighted, as well as some of the hedges. These changes were so marked and numerous, that in going to a locality with which I was well acquainted I lost myself several times. This arose from new enclosures having taken place, and old roads being diverted. It appeared to me, however, from the mere glance that I took at the

Nelson farming, that they were either over-cropping their land, or else neglecting to apply the quantity of manure which bears the denomination of good management. Two events of no small importance have occurred in the Nelson settlement, possibly destined to make it keep pace with its sister and neighbouring colonies, if not to go quickly ahead of them. This, however, remains for the future thoroughly to develop, as at present doubts and speculative theories, as well as sanguine expectations, run high, all of which may fall short of their anticipated effects. What I allude to are the discoveries of copper at the Dun mountain, within nine miles of the town, and that of gold at Massom Bay.

I paid a visit to the gaol, and there found eleven persons. This number, I have no doubt, was considered somewhat of a maximum for so small a town, and its increase was attributed to the gold discoveries. The election of superintendent took place during my short sojourn, at which time I saw more drunken people than I ever fell in with among the savages of all lands.

## NELSON DIGGINGS.

On the 10th of October I left the town of Nelson, calling at Motuetra on my way to Massom Bay, the present site of the Nelson gold diggings. I was informed, on asking the question at one of the best firms of the town, as to what amount of gold had been exported from the diggings, that £30,000 was the sum total of its value. A number of diggers were fellow-passengers, one of whom informed me that he had made £1,000

in three weeks, and another that he had not effected anything extraordinary, but that he had succeeded in making £2 a day. On approaching that part of Massom Bay where the town of Collingwood is built, which is the new town that has rapidly risen in consequence of being the post of the gold-diggers, the number of houses amounting to from thirty to forty. The site on which the town of Collingwood stands belongs to Mr. Gibson. He purchased a forty-acre section some time back, perhaps at the cost of twenty or thirty shillings per acre. The same section is now valued at £25,000. So much for gold-digging as enhancing the price of land. I had an interview with Mr. Gibson, who seemed a very sensible and well-behaved man, and sufficiently public-spirited to be doing far more for the benefit of the town than the Government of the province.

Nothing could possibly exceed the singularity of the scene that presents itself to the traveller on entering the town of Collingwood. A wood, consisting of the finest possible timber, extends from the foot of a very high mountain to its very summit, without leaving the slightest interval; a table-land in front of it, without a single tree, and with very few shrubs, lay almost contiguous to the mountain; below this a swamp, a lowland covered with a most peculiar yellow rush intermingled with a lovely green moss, formed a third and distinct group of the series. These three districts differed most widely in their geology and botany. Another glance beyond the wooded part brought into view the distant alps towering into the clouds, capped with eternal snow. In the swamp was a river meandering in its course

among hundreds of uprooted trees, brought down by the action of the water, white as skeletons, strewn in every direction, contrasting in the most marked manner with their umbrageous brethren of the neighbouring forest full of freshness, vitality, and vigour. The tide receded at low water, leaving exposed a beach beautifully clean and sufficiently firm to enable both the pedestrian and equestrian to take their respective exercises. A sandpit, or rather a series of sandpits, extended from the mainland into the sea, by which means a harbour, not perfect in kind, is the only shelter the town of Collingwood enjoys from the stormy waves of the ocean. The diggings were considered dull at the time I visited them, in consequence of immense quantities of rain which had fallen, thereby preventing the diggers from carrying on their operations, as most of the gold had been discovered in rivers and rivulets, which were unusually swollen. These rivulets and streams containing the gold being situated in deep ravines and gullies, surrounded, in some instances, on all sides by inaccessible mountains, presented obstacles so formidable as to frighten the old Australian, and even the bold and adventurous Californian gold-digger. To use the phrase of an old New Zealand digger, both the Australians and the Californians, had to lay aside all their hard-earned experience, and to begin again under a new and a different system.

The land in the neighbourhood of Collingwood appeared the most sterile and worthless I ever remember to have seen, being exceedingly swampy and wet, covered with rushes and other plants, that clearly indicated anything but a dry



territory. I was much struck with the singular aspect of one of the little temporary erections of the town. On approaching it I found it to consist entirely of felt, such as hatters employ, with the exception of the door, which was painted red, to make it if possible more remarkable. There were several houses of accommodation both for diggers and visitors, all possessing peculiarities which would have startled some and amused others of the old world unacquainted with life as it is carried on at the diggings. I was strongly recommended to one of them as possessing many advantages over the rest. I repaired to Mr. Everett's establishment for that accommodation which I believed to be the best at the diggings. After dinner, which consisted of a huge cut of mutton, as clumsily carved as if some of the miners had been chopping it with their tools, I had an opportunity, after appeasing my appetite, to look around me and take a sketch, only in words, of this very extraordinary house of accommodation.

Seated in the dining-room, I looked in vain for carpets, sofas, pictures, paper, mirrors, and other things useful as well as ornamental. I beheld, however, everything that was useful, entirely bereft of the ornamental. To the right hand of the table where I had dined were suspended from the wall two Macintoshes, and a towel, and a weighing-machine; half a sheep, with a stone bottle dangling from the same nail; three saws oscillating in the wind, which came down from the roof, being close to the head of a dead fish, with its eye sufficiently lifelike to be expressive, as it were, of both surprise and horror at the operation

of being sawed, of which it seemed singularly conscious by a peculiar development of the eye. In the centre stood a table, on which was placed an orange box in conjunction with a huge tin dish, destined for the reception of a quarter of mutton, tilted upon one side like a vessel on its beam end, several bottles of pickles, with a dozen or two of plates for the foreground, bounded on the right by a couple of bottles of raspberry vinegar, or something similar, and to the left by a huge teapot. Underneath the table were a lot of sacks, a riddle or sieve, with no end of bags, and a lot of carrots heaped up in a corner. Above the table was a shelf containing half-a-dozen bread-loaves, two or three pounds of candles spread out with great accuracy, with the vinegar cruet gracefully suspended. Beneath this was a sheet or veil, which reached only to half the height of the wall, for the express purpose of shutting out the vulgar eye from gazing on the various eatables which were enshrined in this *sanctum sanctorum*. Beneath, in one corner of the room, was a big bucket, wrong end upward, as if it had suddenly suffered from the shock of an earthquake, placed near to a sack of potatoes, with a plentiful supply of pickaxes and shovels for associates, and several old boxes to boot, one piled on the top of the other, and surmounted with a mattress rolled up, forming a kind of apex, the whole not dissimilar in appearance to a rough sketch of a pyramid. On the wall to the left was seen, most legibly written, "All meals to be paid for before leaving the table," which beautiful specimen of penmanship was intercepted, or rather cut in two, by a shirt fresh from the wash-tub, there placed to be bleached

and dried and ironed under the fostering influences of wind, smoke, and occasionally a strong flight of blacks from the kitchen chimney, which was sufficiently near for the purpose. On the same side, suspended from the wall, were a pair of digger's slings for carrying weighty matters, a big bacon flitch, with a huge ham for a companion, over which were hung two tin canisters and a coffee-pot, with the spout and body dangling horizontally, swinging about like a sailor in a hammock instead of being vertically placed, which is the true position of a coffee-pot; and, I may add, that it was due to its grandeur, majesty, and size, that such an unwarrantable liberty ought not to have been taken with one which would otherwise have been of such noble standing if it had been placed properly on the shelf on its own foundation. It was the most colossal coffee-pot I ever beheld; the supply it contained was equal to that of a small pump. In the centre of the left-hand wall was the entrance to the kitchen, where the cooking apparatus might be well seen, as no door divided the dining-room from the *cuisine* department. There were no chairs, forms being substituted. The house itself was a wooden skeleton, merely covered with coarse calico or canvas, without mud, bricks, mortar, stone, thatch, tile; equally bereft of all windows, and with only one door, so constructed as to let in from its numerous crevices light, heat, and the sun, thus answering to the threefold capacity of door, window, and ventilator. The floor was as nature made it—the surface of the earth, only differing from out of doors by the removal of the native flora, or the plants and weeds which covered it.

In short, the floor was such as might be seen in every well-cultivated garden, when all the weeds are hoed and well kept down. A bit of canvas separated the sleeping apartment from the kitchen by being suspended in the doorway; this was substituted for the wooden division, the door as yet being in embryo, very probably at some carpenter's shop in the vicinity, or more probably in the wild, wild woods, too far away to bear the expense of felling, hewing, planing, and joinering. One might have supposed that in such an establishment an *ad libitum* kind of life might have been adopted. This, however, was far from being the case, as certain restrictions were laid upon the inmates in the following terms—"No smoking allowed in the bedrooms." The bedrooms consisted of two tier of trunks, wherein perhaps a dozen diggers might repose. I tumbled in with the rest, being attired as a digger, in a heavy pair of medium lace-boots, with a sailor's flannel-shirt for an envelope. I had with me eighty sovereigns, which I placed by my side in a stocking for a purse, during two nights' repose, without fear of molestation or of robbery, among rough diggers, many of whom, I have no doubt, were as honest as their superiors.

I may here mention a rather laughable circumstance. I had paid a visit to the magistrate of the place. On returning home he very kindly escorted me to a particular spot, from which he did not doubt that, stranger as I was, I should not fail in reaching my house of accommodation. When my friend left me I was within a few yards of my destination without knowing it, believing that some fifty or sixty yards farther

would bring me to the desired abode. At the time that I was wondering whether I should turn to the right or the left I was actually within a yard of my own dormitory. Some of my fellow-companions of the bedchamber had retired to rest rather early, accompanied by a bull-dog, whose ferocity and fidelity were undoubted. They and the dog heard footsteps around them, which induced them to believe that an attack on themselves was about to be carried into execution. At this particular juncture the dog barked and growled in a manner that indicated how easily I should be his victim in case of attack, especially when I heard the following remark: "I say, Bill, where is my revolver? for I am sure there is somebody about the tent, as that dog never gives a false alarm." Finding that I had got into a hornet's nest, I immediately began to think upon the best method of extricating myself; and, finding the light shining through the thin canvas of a neighbouring tent, I shouted at the top of my voice, "Will you be good enough to tell me the way to Everett's, as I am a stranger and visitor." Upon which a voice saluted me in reply, by stating that it was quite near. Not wishing to encounter the revolver and the bull-dog a second time, I said, "May I trouble you to show me the way, as I am entirely lost." After a little hesitation, a person came out of the tent and informed me that the place where I had heard the bull-dog barking, and the consultation touching the revolver,—that that identical place was Mr. Everett's establishment. I entered the house, told the story to the landlord, and afterwards went to bed, ruminating on the many curious

adventures that necessarily occur during the life-time of a gold-digger.

Having heard of a famous cave which excited much wonderment on the part of the diggers, I repaired to the spot, traversing a very sterile and uninteresting country, until I descended into a wild gorge, in which was the entrance of the much-talked-of phenomenon. The gorge was filled with some of the finest timber to be found in New Zealand, with a stream of water, which at the mouth of the cave became submerged. I was exceedingly struck with the height, breadth, and peculiar structure of a rata tree. I walked round it, and found it to possess a circumference of eleven yards. Shoots of trees were exposed, tangled and twisted in such a manner as to render progress next to impossible. With a great deal of difficulty we pushed through them. The cave at its entrance was completely paved with boulder stones of enormous dimensions, leaving little doubt that at one time it must have been the boundary either of the sea-shore or of some extensive lake. It was thirty feet in height, or more, with a roof beautifully ornamented with stalactites of various sizes, most of which had been removed or broken in twain by the strong and omnivorous propensity of the diggers, evincing bad taste united to the organ of destructibility. Laterally, it was furnished with tabular projections of one long continuous mass, sufficiently capacious to dine many scores of persons, entirely unsupported from beneath either by boulders or any other material. They were projected from the wall precisely after the fashion of a table, being quite horizontal. At the top of the cave a deep and

N

lengthy fissure extended as far as I could see. Some of my companions proceeded to explore this wonderful excavation, each provided with a candle, which he carried in his hand, while I with another remained at the mouth of it, in order to see the effect of the light, which shone in upon it for a considerable distance. Nothing could possibly approach more to the romantic and the grotesque: with the light of heaven shining at one end, whilst our companions approached us from the other extremity, dashing their feet into subterranean rivulets among the boulders which formed the bottom of this remarkable excavation, looking more like sprites from the invisible world; while the words and occasional shouts that saluted the ear, echoing and reverberating along the roof, altogether presented a spectacle well suited to illustrate the stories of the Arabian Nights. Our companions who explored the cave fancied they had walked about three hundred yards in this subterranean abode. I heard of another, four miles higher up in the mountain, more extraordinary than the one described, but, satisfied with the one I had seen, I did not feel disposed to undertake a second exploration. Very near to Collingwood I observed the scarlet lichen growing upon boulders. It is this interesting member of the vegetable world, when seen in the snowy districts of arctic regions, that has frequently passed for red snow. The botany of this locality will amply repay the student, being most original and singular in its aspect, as well as exceptional in the character of its flora. One of the mountains previously alluded to was covered with timber of the most majestic character, resembling

more a spur of the Andes than that of the Antipodes. The geology of the neighbourhood was likewise instructive, as to the peculiar manner in which horizontal layers of earth, and different strata deposited at the level of the sea, become afterwards raised so as to form hills, mountains, plateaux, and other features characteristic of mountainous districts. Various terraces, as level and as smooth as a table, which had once formed the bed of the ocean, now might be seen, elevated by these various subterranean forces which had acted upon them. Some of these little plateaux had attained a position high up among the mountain ranges thousands of years since, whilst others were forming at the bed of the ocean, giving a beautiful, useful, and practical illustration of modern geological action. One of the best specimens of these curious terraces has received the very polite cognomen of the "Devil's Table," I suppose from some of the rough and uneducated diggers. I beg leave, however, to differ from them, and will undertake to christen it afresh, by handing it over to the true proprietor and rightful owner, under the new title of one of God's most singular and attractive works to be found at the Nelson Diggings. Another of these remarkable flats was covered with a most peculiarly brown, or rather dingy red, rush, intermingled with a lovely moss, green in one part and red at the top, united to some stunted fern, forming the universal crop, like grass in the American prairie, reigning alone in its vast profusion, and stamping at once with the indelible impression one of nature's rarest and most eccentric localities.

A steamer bound for Wellington having called



at Wanganui, I left the Nelson Diggings for that town. In the short voyage I encountered a state of weather which may be deemed most exceptional for the locality (Cook's Straits), viz., calm weather, where it almost invariably blows a hard gale.

#### WANGANUI.

The traveller cannot fail to be much struck with the almost invariably steep iron-bound coast of New Zealand—mountains that rise from under the surface of the water, so as to present steep and inaccessible acclivities to such a degree, that were the mariner shipwrecked, and unprovided with some of the agile and dexterous qualities of the rat, mouse, cat, fish, bird, or monkey, his fate unquestionably would be that of entombment in the waters of the ocean. This character, united to the picturesque spurs of the New Zealand mountains, which diverge from various points, like the radii of the circle, or rather the divisions of a lady's fan, with the beautiful light of heaven shining upon them, present a spectacle of beauty and originality and sublimity which is not to be seen in Switzerland, Italy, Norway, Scotland, or any other part of the world that I have visited. No word-painting can do justice to this most picturesque of all scenes, especially when illuminated by the rays of the rising or setting sun. It must be visited, seen, and felt with true emotion, in order to be duly appreciated. It strikes the eye of the man of taste like a beautiful woman at first sight, and the more you study it the more perfect it appears. In works of art, unless of the very highest kind, as well as in beautiful women too,

we, alas, too soon discover marked deviations from the law of beauty and well defined symmetry. In this scene, however, all the powers of your keenest criticism are heavily taxed to find a flaw; and that which appeared at first sight an eyesore in the mountain would, on further reflection and examination, recoil upon the spectator, by proving the flaw to be in himself.

This scene, as you approach the town of Wanganui, disappears altogether for one of another kind, and one that is far more advantageous to the agriculturist as well as to one occupied in pastoral pursuits. The mountains recede to a considerable distance from the coast line, leaving the interval occupied with undulating hills, so placed as to present a pleasing variety, until they approach the coast, where they terminate in flats, or very slight elevations. The beach at the entrance of the harbour of Wanganui gave strong indications of the sea, at some ancient geological epoch, having encroached upon the land. This was apparent from the fact of a description of strata standing apart, forming a steep and elevated cliff, surrounded by a beach entirely of another character, whilst patches of the former might be seen at various distances. I have heard the opinion expressed by some of the New Zealand settlers, that they had colonized the country before nature had carried out her various operations, so as to render the soil suitable for the habitation of man.

On each of the banks of the river Wanganui I observed strata and soil of such a peculiar character, that it resembled more a chaotic mass requiring those geological changes, and the plastic hand of

nature, to renew it in some other form and quality before it could be made available for agricultural and pastoral purposes. This illusion, however, soon vanished when I landed, for it was there that I found some of the richest grass-fields in the whole of New Zealand, as well as every other feature of a soil of the richest kind.

Our entrance into the river caused no little sensation, it being the second time that the settlers had witnessed the sight of a steamer. The town was all alive. The town of Wanganui, although small, taking it altogether, is one of the prettiest towns in New Zealand. The houses are spacious and well built, and many of the shops would not disgrace any town in the old country. One or two of the public buildings stand on eminences, among which may be enumerated the stockade, where, a few years since, all the stirring scenes of war were unfortunately carried on, to the great detriment of the settlers, many of whom had to fly for safety, and become residents in other parts of New Zealand. The river Wanganui is one of the most striking objects, being more available for navigation than any of the New Zealand rivers that I have seen; and at all times well supplied with water, so as to entirely cover the channel through which it flows—a circumstance of no small value to a young and rising colony.

After paying a visit to Mr. Taylor, the missionary, who is the author of a very interesting work on New Zealand, with one or two others of the leading settlers, I quitted the town to return to Wellington.

## CHAPTER XI.

## VOYAGE FROM WANGANUI TO WELLINGTON.

ON October the 16th I left Wanganui in the steamer for Wellington. Instead of taking the pilot on board to cross the bar, which is a matter of some difficulty as well as danger, he remained on shore, signaling from the flagstaff the particular directions we were to pursue in making our exit from the river. When crossing the bar the breakers foamed and tossed our steamer about in a manner that fully proved that there was some risk incurred in the undertaking. I was not a little gratified when I found myself beyond their reach, in the quiet and graceful swell of the rolling sea. We should have reached Wellington the same evening, but for encountering, in Cook's Straits, one of those hard gales which might be termed, very appropriately, a little typhoon. We had a favourable wind in the straits, when all of a sudden (a thing by no means unusual), an opposite burster came on in a manner so furious that the captain, on hurrying into the cabin, declared it was blowing a hurricane. These winds, in Cook's Straits, blow generally in two directions, with little variation. When one declines another comes on in the opposite direc-

tion, seldom or never otherwise. Some of these winds, which may be denominated young typhoons, from the violence with which they blow, come on gradually until they reach their greatest force; others burst upon the astonished crew in a moment with all their fury, not, however, without giving warning, and then gradually decline. This latter has received the name of "butt-ender," from its resemblance to that part of a gun which is the heaviest, strongest, and broadest. The gale that attacked our bark was one of these "butt-enders." We kept under the shelter of the land as well as we were able until daylight appeared, at which time the gale gradually began to subside. On approaching the harbour of Wellington, we observed a small schooner in the distance, which hoisted signals of distress. We bore down to her, and ascertained that the tremendous gale of the previous night had destroyed nearly all her canvas, and consequently disabled her. She was from Canterbury, eight days out, with a scarcity of water and other provisions, carrying the mail for England. At this particular juncture we were very near to a fearful tide-rip, which lay directly in the direction in which we were sailing. It was the intention of our captain to have avoided it, but having taken the disabled vessel in tow, and being behind time, he determined, prudently or imprudently, to steam through it at all risks. Here I beheld a scene that I shall never forget. Not a breath of air stirred the serene atmosphere that enveloped the tops of the New Zealand mountains, whose summits stood out in admirable relief, exquisitely cut in magnificent outline against the blue sky. Not a

frown shadowed the surface of the water, as the wind, having expended its strength, had stilled into breathless silence. Such was the weather when we entered the tide-rip. I thought the captain mad as he placed himself on the bridge to give the necessary instructions. At last we were in the surf, as truly such as if we had been stranded on the coast. The vessel that we took in tow reeled and stumbled like a drunkard, having no canvas to steady her. I had seen many pictures of the shipwreck, it seemed as if the reality itself was now before me. The steamer's head being to the breakers, she managed to scramble over them with tolerable agility. Frequently did the vessel in tow appear doomed to destruction, but, as if by a work of magic, she as often recovered her hold of the ocean wave. After half an hour's galloping up and down these convulsive waves, we at last reached the heads, and entered the harbour of Wellington. Such was the fury of the gale, that a vessel riding at anchor in the harbour broke from her moorings, with a valuable cargo, and was driven upon the rocks, and, with her cargo, was completely lost. A small house in Wellington was blown over during the same gale.

## WELLINGTON.

The town of Wellington, since my visit in 1851, had undergone fewer changes than I anticipated; a new government-house, of considerable size, as well as a new hospital, equally commodious, being the most striking. The site on which the latter is built is rather remarkable.

Its two extremities are situated on flats, or level land, where straggling streets and good houses are seen, with excellent gardens, orchards, and paddocks. The intervening part consists of a long row of houses facing the harbour, very near to the water's edge, situated at the foot of a high cliff. This is the least interesting part of the town, although it contains the greater part of the best shops. In this quarter its extension and growth are circumscribed by the sea in front, and by a high cliff behind. Nevertheless, many very good houses sit perched at its summit, in order to enjoy the privilege of being above their neighbours. These houses, when once entered, give an excellent view of the harbour and surrounding scenery; but to the gouty and short-winded, the halt and the lame, the walk to and fro must be effected with considerable difficulty. .

Many of the hills in the neighbourhood of the town had undergone a complete metamorphosis. The native trees and shrubs had been removed to make way for beautiful green grass, bounded on all sides with their neat fences, ornamented with cattle grazing and frisky horses. These hills are remarkable for having been the source of a new discovery in the science of pastoral pursuits, viz., that the very highest part of the mountains or hills, instead of being poor and worthless, have proved to be the very richest portion, a fact communicated to me by the present able and distinguished superintendent of the province. Had my information come from a pot-house or a casual stranger, I should have had the statement corroborated before committing it to paper. The

election for superintendent took place during my short sojourn. It appeared to me that the Wellingtonians, as well as the Nelsonians, are extremely fond of electioneering business. I saw both towns during the election for their respective superintendents: Nelson was remarkable for an excess of drunken men—Wellington less so, with an unusual amount of abuse. Flour-throwing appeared the favourite game at the latter place, accompanied with uproarious proceedings. Strolling one day in the town, and observing a sudden muster in a particular quarter, I hastened to the spot, and there discovered that Dr. Featherstone, the present superintendent, was about to return thanks to the electors for the high honour conferred upon him, on being elected a second time to the highest office in the province. I was much struck with the truly gentlemanlike appearance, attitude, gesture, and oratorical powers of the speaker. He had a tremulous expression of voice; that gave a fine effect to the many beautiful sentences he uttered; and I was truly delighted to hear him give utterance to some very noble political sentiments, that were well calculated to improve the morals of the electors. Taking Dr. Featherstone altogether, he is vastly superior to nine-tenths of the parsons of all denominations in England as a speaker, and quite ahead of the majority of the M.P.s of the House of Commons. I paid a visit to the gaol, and there ascertained that the Roman Catholics were 100 per cent. higher in the criminal catalogue than any other sect. The convicts, in bygone times, were sent to Van Diemen's Land, but are now retained in



the settlement. They are compelled to work. The same day that I visited the establishment a prisoner locked the turnkey in his own cell, scaled the walls, and obtained his liberty. They were not long, however, in recapturing the fugitive. In taking a walk to Karori, a short distance from the town, through a twisting road in the mountains, some of the most magnificent sylvan scenery I ever beheld will naturally attract the attention of the traveller. About three miles on this road stands the Asylum. On entering the grounds I fell in with one of its officials, when the following conversation ensued:—

“I am a stranger; will you permit me to go over the building?”

*Officer*: “I cannot allow you without the permission of the doctor, and he is not in the way.”

“I should be very sorry to cause you to infringe any of your rules.”

*Officer*: “Oh, out here in the colonies we don’t mind so much about superiors: if you like, I will show you over.”

I asked him whether the old-settled colonists or the newly-arrived immigrants went mad soonest. His reply, which certainly seemed like an *argumentum ad hominum*, for he very knowingly looked me in the face as he answered, “The new-comers are maddest of all.”

I took it very good-naturedly. An institution on so small a scale does not require an elaborate description. The fact of the existence of such an establishment speaks well for the settlement. I think there were ten or twelve inmates at the time I paid it a visit, with room for a few more.

In consequence of the gold discovery most things have risen in price. I lived in apartments, for which I had to pay a guinea a-week rent. I could have had the same accommodation in London for six shillings. As the windows in my apartments were so constructed as not to open, I was compelled to have the doors frequently thrown open; and, examining other houses in the settlement, I found them to be similarly constructed. Surely such a state of things reflects but little credit either on the Government of England or the nation at large, that ignorance so gross should be found to exist, to the great detriment and discomfort of every visitor who may require an apartment, in which he has to risk his life; nor can it be less injurious to the settlers themselves. Let me not be misunderstood: I am not describing the residences of the leading people of the colony; they, no doubt, take care to breathe as much pure air as they require. I explained to my landlady the disadvantage of her windows, to which she seemed to listen with attention. Would not some gentleman member of the Athenæum do well to give a lecture upon the physiological action of fresh air on the animal economy? Let him breathe his own carbonic acid gas that is continually given off from his lungs into a glass in such a manner as to prevent its escape; then place a sparrow in it to breathe the same air that he has expired; the result will be the death of the bird. A chemical experiment of this kind, well performed, to prove to the people that for want of a little enlightenment and education, and more fresh air,

they were literally murdering themselves, would prove not only instructive, but would prevent them from committing *felo-de-se*—a condition most essential to the welfare of a young colony, where every working individual, if he does his duty, is more valuable to the community than a horse. How many are there that are not as valuable as a donkey! Before leaving Wellington I ran down to the valley of the Hutt, where some of the best land and the most cultivated fields may be seen perhaps in the whole of New Zealand. This valley rivals anything to be found in Switzerland for romantic grandeur, while it far surpasses that country in its cereal crops and beautiful green fields. The fine roads, the churches and chapels, the hawthorn hedge, the well-partitioned fields, the excellent herds of cattle and horses, and the wide range over which they extend, fully prove the prosperity and industry of the settlers of the Hutt Valley. I paid visits to two or three settlers, where they lived in comparative mansions, having their lawns, shrubberies, and gravel roads, iron gates, and even lodges, and many of the characteristics of a first-rate gentleman of the old country. On observing a remarkably fine rata tree towering to the skies, with its broad and umbrageous branches, I passed into the field, when I met with three of the most remarkable things I ever remember to have seen in one locality. The first was the tree; the second the crop of grass, growing in the same field; and the third, an extraordinary stout, tall, fleshy woman, whom I took, at least, for forty years of age, who, upon being questioned

upon the very delicate subject, replied, "I am only seventeen, and a native of the country." A valley that will produce timber, grass, and women of such colossal dimensions, cannot be a very bad part of the world for a poor emigrant.

## CHAPTER XII.

## ABORIGINES OF NEW ZEALAND.

THE aborigines of New Zealand may be classed amongst the most intelligent, sagacious, and sharp-witted savages that ever existed at any age or time. Notwithstanding the immoral influences of early settlers, many of whom, in past times, were drunken whalers, who sought the shores of New Zealand for the express purpose of money making, contaminating them by bad examples; nevertheless, they have not only emerged from barbarism, but possess a moral bearing and a grandeur of character which, in many instances, the white man would do well to follow. Drunkards are very rare amongst them. At the time that Captain Cook first visited them they amounted, it is supposed, to half a million. Mrs. Clifford informed me that Messrs. Wild and Wortley very recently visited paha capable of holding three hundred, in which they found not more than thirty individuals. It is very probable that they do not amount at the present time to more than 20,000 or 30,000. This dreadful decrease in numbers has not been the want of the fostering hand of the Government; neither has it arisen from lack of energy and zeal on the part of the

missionaries. They have reserves of land, of which they claim the fee simple; they are good cultivators of the soil, construct good boats, have accounts at the banks, are great lovers of money, and can pull an oar as well as the white man. I heard it stated upon one occasion, that a New Zealander was anxious to be educated, in order to ascertain to what extent the white man robbed him. At the time the war was carried on, our soldiers were anxious for engagement with a party of natives who were very busily occupied in getting in their harvest. They sent the aborigines a challenge to fight. The answer that they received sheds a lustre upon the New Zealand character, as evincing not only physical pluck, but a high moral courage united to great good common-sense, and I very much question if any of the working population of Europe would have delivered a more sparkling reply: "We are too busily employed now getting in our harvest, but as soon as we have finished we are quite ready to fight you." They make excellent policemen. They are remarkably free from the charge of highway robbery. The Superintendent of Wellington informed me that the postman from Auckland, laden with gold, bills of exchange, and other valuables, had to traverse a district in which they abounded, unprotected, without being robbed or even molested. An affray took place in the province of Auckland between the natives and the white population, in which either a native or a white man was killed. This circumstance was near leading to an outbreak between the parties, which, however, was prevented by the opportune interference of Colonel Wynard, who was then

in power, during the absence of the Governor. I believe that he went down in person to the natives, pacified them, and thereby prevented the shedding of blood. They thanked him for his timely interference, promised to keep the peace, and begged of him in case any misunderstanding should arise in future, that he would send no representative, write no letters, but come down to them to discuss the subject with them face to face, head to head. It strikes me that these savages possessed an intuitive knowledge of the many fallacies and thin-skinned logic of diplomacy. The following anecdote I had from the governor of the gaol at Wellington :—

A prisoner escaped. The governor went to a maori convict, who traced the man, gave a signal, humbugged the prisoner with the notion that he had done well in escaping, and that he should have done the same himself ; and so kept him in conversation until the governor arrived, when the fellow was recaptured.

Mrs. Clifford allowed me to take a copy of the following letter, which was written to Sir George Grey and Mr. St. Hill, a magistrate, by a New Zealand chief, the subject being the loss of his wife :—

*“ Parantankoo, 15th Nov., 1851.*

*“ TO SIR GEORGE GREY.*

*“ FRIEND GOVERNOR,—Notice you and Mr. St. Hill: I speak about my woman, wishing you to search for her. You can send the police to search, and if they find her, send her back. If she is not found, let the Europeans know about*

my woman. I would die for a woman. Land would be let go for a woman. I will never give over troubling you for my woman. This is all from me, friend to you both,

“NA MOKA  
“RANGHIATA.”

Mrs. Clifford assured me that she had witnessed the sudden decline of native girls without any apparent attack from any malady whatever. She described it as a general wasting or breaking-up of the constitution. At Wellington I went to the hospital, to learn some particulars in relation to the natives. I had previously heard that, at a period of time quite recent, the natives, prior to the arrival of the white men, were in a great measure, if not entirely, free from the maladies of the immigrant; and that, after the intermingling of the two races, the white man had communicated all his disorders to the natives, whilst they themselves enjoyed a comparative freedom. This view of the question, however, was entirely contradicted by the present physician of the institution. He informed me that scrofula, and consumption, and inflammation of the lungs, were common diseases of the natives in the year 1840, which statement entirely settles the dispute, as that period was the date of the commencement of the colony, or thereabouts. A remittent fever, ending with typhoid symptoms, with *haki haki*, a kind of New Zealand itch, he considered as an endemic disorder of the country. He fully concurred in the general statement that the natives were fearfully declining, but remarked at the same time that he had hopes of its being stayed, as he believed at Taupo there was a healthier



race. At Wanganui I visited several of their residences with one of the missionaries. I was much struck with the skill and taste displayed in their ornamentation and carvings in wood outside their habitations, and the more so when I learnt that the only article employed was a simple nail. The crops under cultivation at Wanganui were the best I had seen up to that period. At the time of my visit to Wanganui, Mr. Taylor, the missionary, had gone to a distant part to act as mediator between two native tribes who were threatening each other with all the horrors of war. The assistant of Mr. Taylor informed me that he believed the Roman Catholics had fomented the quarrel between the hostile tribes, in order to make merchandise of them in a religious point of view, or, in other words, to get them into the confessional. The Roman Catholics were most assiduous in their exertions to make native converts to their own creed, and the manner in which they appealed to the natives was well calculated to carry out their views. They constructed mills for the natives without charge, and then begged of them to give them an equivalent in simply coming to the mass, and afterwards to the confessional. To what extent they have proselytized the aborigines I am not able to assert. I questioned the assistant missionary as to the education of the maoris, who informed me that they had a school; but at the time that I visited them the scholars were unfortunately either at home, or else employed in cultivating the grounds. He informed me that they had some difficulty in getting them to school. He spoke of them as possessing a disposition of the most mercurial kind, having much

difficulty in keeping them for a length of time to any one particular subject. As Christians he spoke of them in the highest terms. He informed me that he had numbers of these savages as communicants at the sacrament, who sixteen or seventeen years ago would have been but too delighted to have made a hearty meal of his precious person, as they then considered human flesh as the greatest possible *bonne bouche*. He stated that one of the natives had not only been converted, but had turned preacher, and possessed an eloquence and fervour rarely surpassed by the white man. He informed me that a military gentleman had a mistress, whom he at length abandoned, as is usually the case with those unfortunates. Some young maori had illicit intercourse with her, for which they were expelled the pah, or, in other words, excommunicated in the aboriginal sense of the word. The chief of the tribe took up the question, and deliberately came to the conclusion that excommunication was not a sufficient punishment to the delinquents, and concluded the affair by fining them. This was all done at the instigation of the maoris, not of the missionaries. Should an animal belonging to a native kick, injure, or maim any one of another tribe, it is the custom of the maoris to make compensation for such damage. Upon one occasion a native happened to be riding a borrowed horse; the animal turned restive, and unfortunately kicked a white man; the maori, although not the proprietor of the horse, nevertheless made ample compensation. It is necessary to inform my reader that these statements in reference to the natives were answers to the following question: Have you Christian-

ized the maoris? It is deeply to be lamented that such a noble race of men are being rapidly exterminated; the loss to the colony will be almost irreparable. So completely are they adopting the civilization of the white man, that they now live in houses, wear the costume of the European, and one old chief lives in a capital house, and dines off plate. Some of the chiefs' daughters put on their habits, mount their horses, and gallop away after the fashion of an English lady. The assistant missionary stated that during the whole of his experience not a single maori was had up for stealing. It is the duty of an honest traveller not to be one-sided. In paying a visit to one of the leading settlers of the same district these statements were not contradicted, but it was the opinion of my friend, that the natives under the missionaries were not a whit better than others. My friend, who made this statement, was a nominal Christian, but possibly one who had not undergone a change of heart. My informant, the assistant missionary, possessed all the characteristics, as far as one mortal can judge of another, of an individual who had been born again. An honest traveller, in many instances, resembles a judge: he collects evidence for the jury to decide. I leave the matter, dear reader, in your hands, trusting that you will be impartial in your verdict. By way of conclusion, I may remark that the natives of New Zealand hold property in common, never separately or individually.

## CHAPTER XII.

## HABITS AND MANNERS OF THE SETTLERS.

ON this subject I shall in a great measure speak from personal experience. In the wild grassy wildernesses of Australia and New Zealand, where pastoral pursuits or sheep-farming are carried on, the habits and manners of the people vary according to their respective breeding and tastes. In New Zealand, at one sheep station, I was as well treated as in England, having almost the same attention, comfort, and good attendance of servants, as could be met with in the old country. At another, where the proprietor was one of high respectability, he was not at all too proud to take his meals with his servants in the kitchen, and all his visitors, of high or low caste, had to undergo the same. An old Australian squatter told me that, in the neighbourhood of the diggings, he met with the high-sherriff of a county in Ireland, who had suddenly become metamorphosed into a waiter. In New Zealand I saw two of the finest-proportioned men possible, costumed after the fashion of the lowest of the low. I made inquiries concerning them, and ascertained that they were men of high aristocratic extraction. This I quickly dis-

cerned from their noble features. These men had undergone every possible physical and moral degradation through indolent habits and a drunken career. They had slept out in the open air, lived and cohabited with the worst New Zealand savages, and had become filthy in the worst sense of the word—I allude to that filth that generates new creatures upon the epidermal covering. The descendants and relations of high English aristocracy have known what it is to suffer semi-starvation in the colonies, in a great measure and in most cases arising from imprudence, carelessness, or improvident habits.

From a New Zealand senator of high standing I had the following recital:—

Some years since I was anxious to obtain a sheep-run in Australia, whither I went. After visiting one of the sheep stations, I had for a guide one of the shepherds, who in his speech and manner gave certain indications of having been bred a gentleman. On leaving him for ever, I said, "Well, old fellow, I shall never see you again: I am sure that you have not been a shepherd all your life—you need not be delicate in telling me all about it." The shepherd made no reply. I addressed him a second time, but without extracting from him any information whatever on the subject.

"Well," said my friend, "I am now ready to find my way by myself, and can dispense with your services," at the same time eyeing him keenly, "I know you are a gentleman by birth, although garbed as a shepherd."

"Well," said the shepherd, "if you must know, I am related to the so-and-so's of such a county,

and connected also with the duke of another part of England."

The son of an English duke entered an inn in Australia where I was dining alone, or rather after I had finished my dinner, in a manner so ill-bred and so disgracefully drunk, that I instantly quitted the room. A lady to whom I was introduced in New Zealand, who was born in the country, said to me, believing that I intended settling amongst them, "Well, sir, I congratulate you on having arrived in a country where you will enjoy true liberty." The liberty that she alluded to was the freedom from the social tyranny of the old country, which sometimes throws a greater restraint upon a person than if he were born under the Czar. The manners of the well-bred old Australian squatters possess a frankness and ease that render them far more agreeable than the same class in the old country. In Sydney the descendants of the original convicts now form the leading aristocracy of the place. They possess wealth, higher position, and many of them are the great leaders in social as well as political life. The manners of our ignorant people at home, when they emigrate, frequently improve from the facility they have of associating with their superiors. When, however, they do not, they form sometimes the most objectionable and intolerable bores to be met with. I have alluded to some of the habits and manners of the higher orders; let us now take a glance at the lower.

I remained for some time in one of the best inns in one of the finest towns in Australia, where I

gave an order to the chambermaid. Not knowing her name, I addressed her as Mary. She suddenly coloured as red as a pickled cabbage, tossed her head high in the air, and feeling that all her dignity and self-complacency were annihilated by having given her a misnomer, she said with an air and tone that fully expressed the indignity she had suffered from my remark, "It is not Mary; my name is Jane." At Wellington a member of the Provincial Council was my boatman, and a very exorbitant one too, for he charged me ten shillings for that which would be done in England for half-a-crown. That restraint and systematic code of etiquette so characteristic of the old country, is to a certain extent thrown aside, which gives a charm to colonial society, when it is truly well-bred. In many instances the loss of it, in not restraining young and forward colonial youth, who go ahead far too fast, is deeply to be deplored; it tells both ways—it has its *pros* and its *cons*. I saw one instance of a rough, raw hobble-de-hoy of a fellow, a common shepherd, who had under him, at a sheep station, the son of a gentleman, over whom he tyrannized in the most horrible manner, threatening one day to do for the young gentleman if he did not alter his manners. In Melbourne, when the diggers had pretty much their own way, if they saw even in the streets, any one that was not dressed after their own fashion, the invariable custom was to hoot and shout the new chum, as he was termed. These rough manners have, however, happily to a certain extent fallen into disuse, and been succeeded by another and a better style. I have heard of a writer who suggested to a city missionary the

necessity of reforming the better class of English society by the aid of missionaries—knowing full well that the example set by the rich is too readily adopted by the poorer classes. The same authority, if he were aware of the irreligion, savagism, and barbarity practised by the white races at some of the wild and distant sheep stations of the antipodes, where the uneducated stockman, and in some cases the educated as well, have for years in succession never seen the inside of a church—I think that they also ought to be provided with missionaries. In many cases of colonial life the gentleman has to come down a peg or two, which accounts for the sudden elevation of the working men. I have seen, however, as many delightful, and amiable, and excellent people in the colonies, and quite as well-mannered, as I ever met in Great Britain. I breakfasted with a gentleman related to one of the best families in England, where one servant was kept. The servant-maid either was too incompetent to cook the meal, or very unwilling; so the head of the house set to in good earnest, by blowing the fire, toasting the bread, brewing the coffee, and, in fact, doing the servant's work, whilst the maid herself attended to some other duty or else took recreation in the garden, for I saw but little of her during the repast. A lady remonstrated with a servant-girl for not having rubbed her mahogany table so as to produce the necessary polish. She answered in the following manner:—

“To tell you the truth, ma'am, I did not come out to New Zealand to rub furniture, but to get married.”

I dined with one of the leading personages of



a young settlement at the antipodes, where it was a regular dinner-party. I arrived rather early, before the cloth was laid, and was met by the lady of the house, who shook hands of course with her right hand, while she held the table-cloth in her left. She very soon began to cover the mahogany, whereupon I gave her a helping hand by laying hold of the other extremity, and in a very short time we together quickly summoned the casters, salt, knives, forks, and spoons, and all the other etceteras, without the aid of a servant. An Australian squatter will ride his horse forty, fifty, and even sixty miles, without feeding him, and at the same time perform all the offices of groom, and ostler, and blacksmith into the bargain. He can shoe his horse after he has ridden him. I took lodgings, for which I paid very handsomely, and I invariably found that the children had their little wants attended to before I got either shoes, water, breakfast, or anything else that I might require. I had two rooms, the bedroom, and the other for taking my meals. The latter was so small that I could not dine comfortably. An easy chair, covered with a smart-looking texture, was the most hypocritical apparatus possible. I believe it was made by a tailor, as the angles were all wrong, cramping the body. It might have been sent during the days of the inquisition, to that abominable institution, as a new invention, and as an exquisite means of torture. Once or twice I laid down upon the sofa, and got the cramp, also from it being badly constructed. Neither of my windows opened. I therefore ran considerable risk every day of being poisoned by my own expirations of carbonic acid gas, to prevent which

I opened the door frequently, upon which occasions a host of young urchins, with rosy cheeks and hungry stomachs, would stand looking at me in the passage, as if I had been one of the seven wonders of the world. These young noisemongers and starers had paid a visit to my landlady for the purpose of obtaining a halfpenny-worth of sugar-stick, a penny-worth of nuts, or a piece of that renowned brown ginger-bread that had a space of the window allotted to it in such a conspicuous manner as to set the mouths of the young urchins in the town a-watering. The reader must not suppose that I have been describing the best lodgings to be had in the colonies. All the best had been taken, which left me no alternative but to go where I found myself so peculiarly situated. Ample amends, however, were made for this discomfort, as my landlady dished me up every day some of the finest mutton-chops, tarts, and puddings. She was one of the best cooks I ever met with, either in the colonies or out of them.

I have given the above, not as general and invariable types of colonial manners, but as specimens which are still characteristic of the colonies, and may still, and will very frequently, be met with.

In all the colonies that I have visited at the antipodes an intense selfishness is the leading feature. I allude to that quality as it exemplifies itself in money-making, and in a manner that is deeply to be deplored, viz., that of pigeoning a new chum, or stripping him of his last halfpenny. Indolence, such as is thoroughly unknown in the United States, prevails more or less throughout all the antipodean colonies, except in Victoria, where

they are weeding out the black sheep, and employing the idle grumblers, who form leagues to impose upon those who are liberal.

That democracy has been progressing gradually and imperceptibly for many centuries past, for weal or for woe, and is now rapidly advancing, is fully borne out by those who are at all acquainted with colonial life: to wit, the ballot has been carried at Melbourne; a common working man at Wellington is a member of the Provincial Council; where, besides, the lower orders have petitioned the Government to make them a present of the soil, simply because they are poor men and settlers.

#### POLITICS.

The form of government in New Zealand is somewhat analogous to that of the United States of America. There are six provinces in New Zealand, which are all empowered to elect their own representatives. These, again, elect other members to form the general parliament, or federal government, of the country, who meet once a year for the transaction of business, at Auckland, the capital of the country. The electors of the provinces possess also the qualification of voting for a representative of the federal government. The qualification of an elector is so small, both in Australia and New Zealand, that it approaches very near to universal suffrage. The superintendent is the highest functionary in the six provinces of New Zealand. He is the speaker of the Provincial Council, and possesses the power of placing a veto upon the proceedings of the House. I had the pleasure of dining with the speaker of the

general parliament, who informed me that their first debate was carried on with as much vigour and talent as if it had been discussed in the House of Commons. Each province has laws peculiar to itself. Other laws are enacted by the General Federal Government at Auckland, while in some instances the laws of England are still in force; and, as there are six provinces and a general government at Auckland, the New Zealand settlers are under eight different systems of government. At times this has led to many ridiculous and anomalous proceedings, in consequence of some of the provincial governments acting for themselves without consulting the fountain-head at Auckland. The system of electioneering in New Zealand is of a most anomalous and farcical character. It is not only colonial, but completely antipodean to the system carried out in the old country. I have heard it frequently asserted that men have voted very often without the legal and necessary qualifications, and that sons of dead men long since departed, have had their shades numbered to take part in the uproarious proceedings of an election, by having their votes duly recorded.

The vote by ballot has been adopted in Victoria, and is said to work well. The land question, at the time that I visited the antipodes, was the exciting and general topic of the day all over Australia as well as in New Zealand. The following letter, which appeared in a Sydney paper, throws no little light upon this all-important topic:—

“It is a common observation, that there is nothing so short-lived, nothing so changeable, as the breath of popular favour; they who have spent the greater portion of their lives in the arena of

politics are fully aware of this changeableness in the temper of the populace. Men are led, without reflection, to follow a new phantom, and collectively deport themselves in a manner they would be ashamed to do individually. The man in political life who acts conscientiously and according to the best of his judgment, is sure, some time or other, in the course of his career, to displease many of his admirers, and then he must bear the weight of their indignation and wrath, which are poured upon him with the utmost unrelenting fury. His motives are misconstrued, his former services are forgotten, and he is at once represented as nothing but a designing, unscrupulous, and unprincipled schemer. Every man who has taken an active part in political movements has at one period or other experienced the bitterness of feeling arising from this species of ingratitude amongst sections of the people."

Though there is much truth in the preceding paragraph, the author should have known that what men, when disappointed in their views, call ingratitude, the masses may generally designate well-merited retribution; it being a notorious fact that not a few of those men who during the present century have bawled most lustily for the people's rights, have done so, not so much to procure for the masses any amelioration in their condition, as to elevate themselves to political power, that in due time they might secure a few of the loaves and fishes for themselves and their dependants. Had he done so, he would not have written the following:—

"I am not therefore at all surprised to find that the present ministry are just now the object of

most unmerited slander, &c., by some parties, while a few months ago they were in the same proportion the objects of their most intense admiration. No doubt the present ministry have brought into the legislature a bill for the settlement of the 'land question,' which has given almost universal dissatisfaction, and which, should it ever pass into a law, will, in my humble judgment, be found impracticable. But I can *see no reason in this* for heaping upon them such loads of abuse as seem to have been hurled at them a few evenings ago at a meeting held in Wynyard Square."

See no reason! Why, if the bringing in of a bill obnoxious to the great body of the people be not a sufficient reason for hurling abuse at those who attempt to pass such a measure, what, in the name of common sense, will induce the masses to drive their rulers from power. What but a late attempt of this kind here compelled the late Liberal ministry to fly from Downing Street? And every future ministry, be they Whig, Tory, or Radical, will be made to take a similar flight, that may dare to offer so glaring an insult to the national feeling.

But although we do not agree with the writer on these points, nor altogether on the important land question, yet conceiving that his remarks on it deserve something more than a hasty perusal, I give them a place here, in hope that they may attract the attention of those who have both the will and the power of applying them to useful purposes. After a few more preliminary remarks, the author proceeds thus:—

"But I object to the Parliament in New South Wales, or the Parliament of Victoria, or that of

P<sub>1</sub>

Tasmania, making a final settlement of the land question, as they are now attempting to do in their respective colonies, each framing a separate and widely different law. The question is one of a purely federal nature, one in which each of the Australian colonies is as much interested as the other, and it ought, in its broadest sense, to be dealt with only by a federal parliament. The system now being pursued by the different colonies is neither more nor less than a bidding against each other for immigration; and such a system cannot be otherwise than injurious in the long run.

“But there is one species of legislation on the land question which, if acted upon, would go far towards its satisfactory settlement, and which it is the duty of each of the Australian legislatures, but more particularly those of New South Wales, to enter upon immediately. I allude to a tax upon the land; such a tax would do more towards the settlement of an agricultural population in the interior of the colony, and for the opening up of the land, than all the land bills that can well, or ever will, be invented. It would put an end at once and for ever to what all parties, whether sincerely or not, appear to dread so much as likely to come upon us—a monopoly of land, as if there were not a monopoly of land already. If a tax of a shilling or eighteenpence an acre were placed upon all country lands, no matter what their quality or situation, and at the rate of ten shillings an acre upon all town allotments, there would soon be an end to monopoly; and lands in all parts of the country, now locked up in the hands of private individuals, would soon be in the market

in great abundance, and at a rate so cheap that every industrious man who was desirous of obtaining a farm could do so.

“When we remember that there are individuals here who are in possession of their 50,000 and 100,000 acres each, which they will neither lease nor sell, we can easily imagine how eager they would be to sell after the tax-gatherer had called upon them for a year’s payment of their tax, amounting to some £2,600 or £7,500, as the case might be, and informed them that he would annually pay them a visit for that sum. Why, there is one company, the Australian Agricultural Company, which in one single district of the country holds no less than 464,640 acres in one place, which was given to this same monopolizing company—a company which for years has been a curse and obstruction to the colony, for nothing. Supposing a tax of 1s. 6d. per acre were imposed upon land—and there is no reason why it should not be, such a tax being just and equitable—this land-monopolizing company, residing in a foreign country, draining the colony of wealth, and contributing nothing towards its exigencies, would be compelled annually to pay to the Government the sum of £34,848 for this grant alone. But besides this, they hold thousands of acres in other parts of the country, which they have likewise received for nothing, and which they keep locked up from the people, selling and leasing it only at high and ruinous prices. If they were thus called upon to disgorge, they would be very soon glad to sell that which they now hold so tenaciously; or they would have to return the land into the hands of the Government, to be disposed of by



them for the advantage of the people at large. I have not the means of knowing, in fact, I believe no return has ever yet been made of the quantity of land alienated from the Crown, but I have reason to believe, that if the plan I propose were adopted, a source of between £600,000 and £700,000 a year would be derived. Were this the case, the Government would have no occasion to borrow, and almost go a-begging to capitalists to induce them to lend; and what debt has already been incurred would be very speedily paid off, which, in spite of Mr. Donaldson's assertions to the contrary, I believe would be a very great blessing; for a state of indebtedness is in no way desirable, either for a country or an individual. This is a question which should be urged upon the attention of the ministry, and I believe that if the representations of the desirability of such a measure were made to them in a proper manner, and from all parts of the colony, they would not be slow to accede to it."

If the above be from the pen of a working man, he may well be proud of being a contributor to a newspaper, for the facility and fluency with which he writes, may take rank, and a vastly superior rank too, with many a man educated at a university; and, although I do not agree with all his statements, he fully proves that knowledge is power for good or for evil, no matter the quarter from whence it comes,—whether from the man of high or low position, the aristocrat or the plebeian. These colonies are the very hot-beds that force the intellect of the working classes, and develop mental qualities which might have lain dormant in the old country without coming to maturity.

In paying a visit to a lady at Melbourne, she made the following remark upon the legislature of Victoria, in reference at least to one of its members,—“The vessel in which I came out from England had a cuddy servant that now exercises his mental faculties in law-making for the settlement.” Prior to my second visit to the colonies, for some years past, I invariably recommended all the working people with whom I came in contact, to pack up as soon as possible for some of our distant colonies, in order to better their condition; not forgetting to lay great stress upon the facility with which they might not only become cultivators, but proprietors, of the soil. I have frequently remarked—If you are an honest man, uneducated, and not remarkable for being a skilful worker—if you will only make the best of your hands, and persevere in the right direction, you are sure, if your health does not fail you, of being on your own acres before you have been there a year and a half, or at most from two to three years.

That this has been a truthful statement can be fully proved by the innumerable cottage-proprietors who occupy the thousands of acres to be found in the Waimea, a short distance from the town of Nelson. This state of things, however, I found, on my last visit to the colonies, to have undergone a considerable change—a change that certainly acts in antagonism to the interest of the working classes. Cupidity on the part of large capitalists, in combination with the squatting interest, has produced that change which acts so detrimentally, and places the lands of the colonies in the hands of the rich almost exclu-

sively. When lands are put up by auction at the upset Government price, say a pound per acre, the poor man, in nine cases out of ten, is ridden over, rough-shod, by the overwhelming influence of rich capitalists and wealthy squatters. I have been informed, however, that at Adelaide, South Australia, there still exist greater facilities for the poor man, and it is to that part of the world that I strongly recommend him to emigrate, where he may place himself upon soil on which he may enjoy all the privileges and advantages so desirable for the sons of poverty—a homestead with its acres. I was very much surprised when I paid a visit to Melbourne, to hear that the labour-market was over-stocked—a declaration which carried upon the face of it one of the greatest fallacies ever uttered in modern times. The poor men at that time were forming leagues for the redress and amelioration of their poverty-stricken condition. A country capable of containing a population of 20,000,000 when thoroughly developed, now not enumerating more than 400,000, clearly proves, I think, the maladministration of government affairs, and that cupidity and immense bungling must have laid the foundation of such an objectionable state of affairs in the colony of Victoria. That indolence on the part of those who constituted the league of working men was a predominant feature, was fully proved from the fact of a spirited Government contractor advertising to employ all who were anxious to be engaged, at a fair remuneration, on some of the Government works. The contractor offered to provide conveyances for the employed; and I believe that at the appointed time not more than some twenty or

thirty accepted the invitation, although hundreds, and perhaps thousands, were out of employ.

The monopoly of the land in the hands of the squatter and great capitalist, with an extremely awkward, and inexperienced, and selfish government, must have been the cause of that anomalous state of things in a young country, where every immigrant ought to meet with employment. I was truly astonished to find many advocates, even amongst those who were old and experienced hands in the colonies, of the opinion, that the labour-market was over-stocked.

In mentioning this view of the subject to the celebrated Mrs. Chisholm, whose head and heart have been so well employed in developing the resources of the colony by means of immigration, I am happy to say that she repudiated the doctrine in the strongest possible terms.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## NATURAL HISTORY OF THE ANTIPODES.

It is not my intention to go into the systematic and lengthy description which constitutes this most delightful branch of natural science, but merely to touch, and that very briefly too, upon some of the features of this charming study, in order to stimulate enquiring minds, and above all travellers, to avail themselves of the vast store of interesting and valuable and rare objects which abound at the Antipodes. Prior to my visit to Australia I had botanized in the Northern hemisphere, nearly from the North Cape in Lapland to the island of Jamaica, and in most countries on the continent of Europe, as well as through the greater part of North America, which gave me a tolerable acquaintance, not only with systematic or descriptive botany, but also with that delightful and most interesting branch of study, the geographical distribution of plants. After such extensive roamings amongst the wild flowers, and many peregrinations amid the primeval forests of Norway, Europe, and North America, I flattered myself that I went well prepared to understand some of the features of the vegetable world at the Antipodes. This, however, was very, very far from being realized.

When I first landed in Australia, to my utter astonishment and bewilderment, I looked around me in vain for my old vegetable acquaintances of the Northern hemisphere. I examined the many wonderful trees which abound in the Australian forest. I looked at the various shrubs that are spread over the surface. I made the acquaintance of all the flowers that surrounded me, not forgetting to pry into banks, hedges, ditches, lakes, and many other localities too numerous to mention, without being able, perhaps, to encounter a true British species. I fell in with the *Anagallis arvensis* and the *Convolvulus arvensis*, which are plants that belong to the British flora, growing in a crop of corn, which circumstance induced me to conclude that they were introduced. I am much inclined to the opinion, from what I saw myself, as well as from what I learnt from those well acquainted with the botany of the country, that a single British species of the vegetable kingdom may possibly not exist throughout the whole extent of the vast continent of Australia. It is quite needless for me to assert that any attempt on my part to give a description of what I saw would be as ridiculous as it would be fruitless. This wonderful region of the vegetable world must be seen by the experienced and well-travelled botanist to be duly appreciated. I may remark, however, that the leaves of the trees possess entirely another character when compared with those of the Northern hemisphere. Instead of being smooth, soft, juicy, and flexible like our own, they are hard, leathery, and comparatively dry, presenting their edges to the sky instead of the broad and expanded surface. Botanists distinguish

them by the scientific name of *Phyllodium*, from the fact of their differing from the trees of Europe. The rind or bark of some of the gum-trees (*Eucalypti*) resemble the skins of eels and some other fishes, rather than the outer covering of an English tree. The first time I beheld the *Epacris grandiflora* at one of the botanic shows in London, it struck me as being one of the loveliest things to be found in the wide, wide world. I was truly delighted one day, when roaming in the neighbourhood of Sydney Heads, to find myself surrounded with numberless specimens of this most elegant species.

Nor is it in the vegetable world alone that this singularity and rarity of British species are to be found. Perhaps in the whole range of ornithology not a bird belonging to Great Britain can be enumerated amongst the various and numerous tribes of birds that stock the Australian continent. Entomology, however, affords a slight exception to this rule, as there are three species which are common to Britain. As far as I was enabled to judge, the character of the fishes too was as perfectly antipodean as other objects belonging to the vast field of natural history. The ornithorynchus and kangaroo are specimens which the zoology of Australia alone presents to the student of natural history.

When at Melbourne Mr. Blandowski gave an account of his recent discoveries in natural history on the lower Murray, extending from December, 1856, to August, 1857, and introduced his remarks by describing the difficult and threatening character of the natural features of the country. The small staff by which he was

accompanied on setting out in December, soon failed to render him any assistance. Prosecuting his studies he had to swim the Murray and other smaller rivers several times, and among them the Darling, which even at three hundred miles from its junction was a formidable river. To the aborigines he was indebted for the greater part of the information and specimens of the country. The general features of the country were correctly laid down in Arrowsmith's large map of Eastern Australia. The Goulburn Ranges, so called by Sir Thomas Mitchell, appeared to have existed only in imagination. That traveller was probably deceived by distant clouds, for there was nothing but extensive plains, relieved by small hills, from one hundred to one hundred and twenty feet in height. From latitude  $32^{\circ}$  a new vegetation commenced; and north of Mount Murchison, at a horizon of some twenty-five miles appeared ranges of some very high hills. He was not able to discover any fossils in Victoria, but found large quantities of very beautiful ones on the South Australian side of the river. In the river Murray he had found sweet-water sponges—he believed a new feature—and various spiders, lobsters, crawfish, &c., besides three species of viviparous shellfish. It was supposed that there were only five kinds of fish in the Murray, but he was able to furnish drawings of no less than twenty. Mr. Blandowski then alluded to an Australian boa constrictor, of which he exhibited a specimen preserved in spirits of wine. The characteristics of the boa—such as the small scales upon the head, the large scales round the mouth, the fangs, and the scales divided on the abdomen, &c.—were



all present; and Mr. Blandowski said the head was a perfect miniature of the American species. He came to a native camp, and asked the natives for a snake; and they found him one four inches in diameter, in an old stump. He regarded the reptile at first as a venomous one; but the natives laughed at him, and he then found it was a boa, and went away with it alive in his saddle-bags. He noticed how the reptile could climb the trees. It had two small legs, difficult to be seen, but sufficiently developed for the purpose of climbing; which process it effected by means of its head and the legs or feet, or as they might be called spores. By the help of these the snake could climb even a straight, smooth gum-tree; sticking the spores into the small holes, often not bigger than a pin's head, with which the bark of the gum-tree is covered. Mr. Blandowski then spoke of a very poisonous snake which he had encountered at Lake Boga, and a specimen of which is in the museum. Of lizards he had met with specimens, some of which were of very curious forms. He believed eleven new species would be added to our fauna. Three kinds of turtle were believed to exist in the Murray, one of which grew to the length of eighteen inches, or more. The eggs were deposited in little holes at the bends of the river, and afforded delicious eating. Of birds he had only been able to discover three new forms, so small were the advances he had in eight years been enabled to make upon the researches of the celebrated Gould. Mr. Blandowski exhibited these three birds, which were all of small size. The bee-eater and a species of parrot were found a considerable distance beyond the dividing

ranges. He had also found the Eos, or rose cockatoo, and two specimens of parroquet. He had found twenty-six specimens of quadrupeds, of which eleven were marsupial. He had paid the natives at the rate of a penny to threepence for specimens, according to their size. On the Darling he had found a small animal, which was in the habit of digging up the dead bodies of animals and devouring them.

Of the natives Mr. Blandowski assured us he could furnish many interesting particulars, if time permitted. He had met with some who lived entirely on vegetables; others on the death of a relative, not only inflicted large gashes upon their persons, but actually burnt their backs by pressing a burning stick slowly over the flesh. At Swan Hill he had seen a finer man than he had met with before in the colony—being six feet six or eight inches in height, and the rest of his frame every way in proportion. Some of the women cut gashes on their thighs, breasts, and arms: why, we were not told by Mr. Blandowski, who after alluding to certain striking peculiarities which the natives used in the treatment of their dead, concluded his interesting remarks.

## LITERATURE.

MANY young tyros in literature may fancy that in a young colony he most probably may meet with that patronage which has, perhaps, been unjustly refused in the old country. A man of first-rate talent might take himself to the antipodes, and be vastly disappointed when he arrived,

unless he happened to fall in with the right stamp of people on his first landing.

In a young country, where money-making, agricultural and pastoral pursuits, fencing the land, and pioneering into the wilderness, are the leading characteristics of the people, literature will find itself at a dreadful discount. In the town of Melbourne, where there are many newspapers and periodicals, and a *Punch* to boot, literary talent, no doubt, at certain intervals, would meet with ready employment and a just compensation. That there are men in the colonies already capable of achieving a respectable *status* in the walks of literature I can fully testify, especially in the department of newspaper literature. The "Australian Essays," advertised in the *Times* some time ago, show, however, that that department has been entered upon, not with the view of money-making so much perhaps as for the gratification of an honourable ambition, seeking no other pleasure than the exercise of the intellect, unremunerated and perhaps neglected. Of the nature, tone, and character of these essays, I am not able to speak. Mr. Hursthouse has written an able, interesting, and amusing book on New Zealand, which has had, I believe, a pretty good circulation in England. Archdeacon Paul, whom I had the pleasure of meeting in the town of Nelson, has written a book upon the Canterbury settlement, which has been reviewed in the English newspapers. Mr. Fox, late agent to the New Zealand Land Company, published, some time since, his "Six Settlements of New Zealand."

Dr. Lang, of Sydney, has made his *début* before the world for some time, as religious reformer,

politician, author, and radical reformer. Besides acting in the capacity of parson, historian, political leader, member of the Legislative Council, the Doctor, some time since, rejoiced in the additional title of editor of a newspaper, now defunct.

When at Sydney, I took up the great newspaper of the colony, the *Sydney Morning Herald*, in which I read an account of a lecture given at the School of Arts by a member of the Legislative Council, upon a poet of the colony of whom I had never heard. The panegyrics passed upon this wonderful poet, who, in the estimation of the lecturer, took a rank with the far-famed Milton, drew forth the strictest animadversion from the *Herald*, who spared no pains in castigating the upstartism and self-complacency of certain would-be *littérateurs* and poets in the colony. This drew forth an answer from the lecturer, who explained that he had been somewhat misunderstood in the eulogies he had passed upon his favourite poet, Mr. Charles Harpur. I will leave the reader to judge for himself, by presenting him to the poet:—

## I.

## BLINDNESS TO MERIT.

Blindness to merit! 'tis an irksome fact  
That meets us in the dull world's every act!  
While of its causes, two in chief, like drones,  
Fly large and lumpish 'mongst the minor ones:  
The first is want of judgment, as a ground,  
And measure of the rule whereby 'tis found;  
The other's worse, and works for social scath,  
As in religion does a want of faith—  
Namely, a poverty of worth, and thence  
Of sympathy with it, as a consequence.  
There once was one, a shrewd, sarcastic rogue,  
Who used to sneer forth this queer apologue:

There is in every shire of every nation  
 A Donkeydom, with a large population,  
 So that when five are met, full three are from  
 (Or four it may be) the same Donkeydom!  
 Prone creatures! having heart, eyes, ears for none  
 In the man portion of their likeness done  
 Who may outmeasure some renowned long Tom,  
 The standard hero of these Donkeydom;  
 For they are clannish, and delight to call  
 Their fellows fondly, brother-donkeys all!  
 With them all noble sentiment's a sham,  
 All unfee'd effort an insulting sham;  
 Nor could an angel make them understand  
 How bravely genius doth enrich a land.  
 In fine, they hate all influence that tends  
 To universal, and not local, ends;  
 And aid in nought that may not issue from  
 Some petty project born in Donkeydom.

Now there is truth here, even though it be  
 Evinc'd methinks somewhat too scornfully;  
 For how can men whose every breath of life  
 Is drawn in the hot air and 'mid the strife  
 Of pettish interests, have a kindred heart  
 With him who hath built heavenward and apart  
 The structures of his mind, and looking thence  
 Over this world-thronged universe immense,  
 Is wont all such emoluments to deplore,  
 As light-obscuring vapours—nothing more?  
 What ladder of experience can they build  
 To mount with, up to a nature filled  
 With beauty, or by mighty truths inspired;  
 Or one even with a bold ambition fired,  
 So to appraise it rightly, and disclose  
 The reason of its godlike overflows?  
 But least of all in such men can there be  
 Devotion chiming into sympathy  
 With some poor soul, unsuccour'd and alone,  
 Struggling in weariness unwearied on,  
 Unwearied, day and night, and night and day,  
 Towards the far Mecca of its faith alway!

But 'tis an old complaint, whose age forbids  
 The grey antiquity of the Pyramids

To stand so far back in the dusk of time;  
 And it is useless, too, though edged with rhyme,  
 If towards some remedy it do not tend,  
 Nor touch us like the warning of a friend.  
 But this it should do, and at once demand  
 Of nature's sovereign men in every land;  
 Whate'er the province of their merit be—  
 Arms, science, morals, art, or poetry—  
 That they do claim, and aid wherever known,  
 All spirits truly kindred to their own;  
 Nor can they shirk this duty if they would  
 Decline not from all noble brotherhood.

But runs this tune too high? Well, let them then  
 Look forth amongst the common herd of men;  
 And gather thence their rule. Yea, let them be  
 As prompt and true in their fraternity,  
 As honest brother Bullion is to rub  
 The world's path smooth for brother Money-grub;  
 And that, ay, even that, I say at last,  
 Will be a brave improvement on the past.

## II.

## FINISH OF STYLE.

A last fine touch will add to, not diminish,  
 The value of all beauty—never doubt it;  
 And what deserveth not a perfect finish  
 Must on the whole be very bad without it.

But against this how pertly some inveigh—  
 Young heady critics, warning men of rhyme  
 Not to correct their juvenals, lest they  
 Should hurt the freshness of the morning prime.

But when to song some damage thus accrues,  
 And it looks faded in a finished dress,  
 The fault was more in the bard's mental hues  
 Than in his artist love of perfectness.

Who more than Coleridge, with a dainty heed,  
 Retouched his verses into faultless shapes?  
 Yet were they tarnished by it? No, indeed,  
 But left all blooming as unhandled grapes.

Q

All genuine bards are critical, and thence  
 Their work with more of care more perfect grows,  
 As Nature's iterated influence  
 But adds a last grace to the full-blown rose.  
 Else were it somewhat puzzlingly apart  
 From the progressive tendency of things;  
 And worse than useless were the poet's art,  
 If best he singeth when he rudely sings.  
 The sum of all is this : with breadth of ken  
 Beyond it, and Promethean fire beneath,  
 Finish of style's the best assurance then  
 Of Poetry's crown'd sovereignty o'er death.

## III.

## LOVE IS SIMPLE.

So long as our wine in its nature be good,  
 What matters it whether we drink it  
 From a vessel of gold or a vessel of wood?  
 And so—even so—to the heart in its health,  
 Is the vintage of love; in itself is its wealth,  
 If we only would think it.  
 But we will not—and thus the main reason is told  
 Why we have it so bad, though in vessels of gold.

The *Sydney Morning Herald*, as I said before, severely castigated a renowned member of the Legislative Council for his unbounded worship of Mr. Charles Harpur. I met with some people of the colony who ought to have heard of this renowned bard. They declared to me that they never heard of the poet before the *Sydney Morning Herald* discussed the point with the Legislative lecturer. It strikes me, without arguing the worth of Mr. Harpur as a poet, that in this respect the people of Sydney are somewhat analogous to the people of the old country, who some few years ago were unacquainted with some of the

greatest philosophers and scientific men of their own land. This state of things is most discreditable to both countries. In England it is vanishing before the enlightenment of the age; not so quickly, however, as might be desired; neither will it until we become an educated people.



## CHAPTER XV.

## VOYAGE FROM WELLINGTON TO SYDNEY.

ON the 3rd of November I left Wellington in a schooner, the smallest I had, until then, sailed in on a long voyage, being only 93 tons burthen. The wind being adverse we had some difficulty in getting out of Cook's Straits. During the remainder of the voyage we unfortunately experienced many such winds; and at last one of the most severe gales I ever beheld, so furious indeed that we were compelled to heave to for twenty-four hours. Though small, most admirably did the little schooner perform her part. So small and so peculiarly constructed was she, that the act of walking during one entire week was an impossibility. For seven complete days in succession I was sea-sick—a thing most unusual with me. To describe all the scenes of the cuddy-table when dining; all that we endured in being pent up, cribbed, and confined, ten times worse than pigs in a sty; the impossibility of walking; the remarkable personages on board—one of the number being a Yankee who had been all over the world as actor, equestrian, singer, comedian, tragedian, wit, humourist—tended not a little to make this one of the most remarkable voyages

I ever performed; and I think if I were to live to the year 1958 (wonderful and rapid as are the changes of this transitory world) a more original crew, a more eccentric class of passengers, a more extraordinary captain, I could never meet in any latitude of the world. To describe all that I endured and saw would require a volume instead of a page; suffice it to say, that I must quit this never-to-be-forgotten voyage with the remark, that after the expiration of eighteen days we made Sydney Heads, and for the second time I entered perhaps the finest harbour in the world, on the 21st of November.

## SYDNEY.

In the year 1851 I wrote a long account of Sydney in my "Tramp to the Diggings," but some changes of a very marked kind having taken place since then, to some of these I shall briefly allude; the new university, not yet finished, being one of them. I went over it in its unfinished state, and I am sorry to say that I learned but little. The building, however, amply repaid me for my trouble. The excellent manner in which its details are executed, its stone chiselled, the mortar placed between them, all testify to the fact that the workmen, builders, and architect have given a lesson to the Melbournites that places the town of Sydney far ahead of the modern wonder of the world. Nothing can be finer in the old country than the hall belonging to this university. From what I could learn, the only classes taught at the university at present are classics, mathematics, chemistry, and physics.

There are four affiliated colleges in connexion with it, viz., the Roman Catholic, the Wesleyan, the Episcopalian, and the Presbyterian. All the students of these incorporated or affiliated colleges, as they are termed, are compelled to attend certain courses at the university. The university and its affiliated colleges are maintained from funds derived conjointly from the Government and private subscriptions. One of the best popular educational establishments is the National School, which professes to be an improvement upon the National System of Ireland, it being the opinion of one long a resident in Sydney, that it was decidedly Roman Catholic in its tendencies. All the various sects and denominations are alike eligible for instruction within its walls. They have no prayers, however, and only read two books in the Old Testament, and two of the Evangelists in the New. I went over the establishment, and was much pleased with what I saw. The head master informed me that some of the poor people of the country, like the same class in England, were not fully alive to the many advantages of education to a young and rising colony. A few of the first-class people attend this popular school in about the same proportion as the very poorest. Some of the parents, from extreme poverty, are not compelled to pay for their children: these form the great exception.

There are three or four denominational schools in Sydney, which may be said to be rivals to this excellent establishment for secular education. I went to the Episcopal denominational school, where I found a comparatively spare attendance, with a rather slovenly teacher, wanting the ala-

crity, tact, and decision which are marked features in the teachers of the National School. I found the boys worse clad than those in the National; rents and dirty garments being very readily perceptible. Here, however, let it be spoken in their favour, that they read the whole Bible, commenced their educational duties with prayer, and ended with the same. The Episcopalian teacher, like the National, admits all sects and different classes of society. Those who do not like the Episcopalian form of worship and its religious teachings, can, if they choose, absent themselves during these exercises. I paid a visit also to the Wesleyan denominational school, where I found the boys but few in attendance, and very dirty into the bargain. This school, like the Episcopalians, admitted all sects and classes of the community, and in the same manner allowed those who disapproved of the form of worship, to absent themselves from the particular form of prayers and various scriptural readings in use. At this school they began their educational teachings with prayer, and ended with singing.

At one of the denominational schools I learnt that the boys of Sydney were the most unruly young rogues to be found in the world. The rapid changes that had taken place in the pastoral, agricultural, and commercial pursuits of the colony, from adversity to prosperity, and *vice versa*, had much affected the school, and very readily accounted for the sparsity of attendance.

In conversing with one of the schoolmasters relative to the social habits of the people, he told me the following: He accounted for the laziness of the people on the ground of their not getting

land on their first arrival; their hopes and expectations running high before landing, many of them having emigrated with a view of becoming proprietors of the soil. Finding themselves thus grievously disappointed, they had recourse to liquor, and many had contracted the bad habit of drinking as a solace for the disappointment they had endured; and thus it is that a bad and selfish government is responsible for the immorality of the community.

From what I could gather, this land grievance is one of the great drawbacks to the prosperity of New South Wales. One of the teachers was of opinion that if drunkenness were not put down it would in a little time be the means of separating the colony of New South Wales from the mother country.

As a proof of the laziness of the people of the colony, a gentleman in a high position, who had been a resident for twenty years, assured me that from Sydney to Paramatta, a distance of some sixteen or twenty miles, not one acre of land in a thousand was in a state of cultivation, and that similar proofs of the same miserable indolence might be seen from Paramatta to Windsor, along a line of road many miles in length.

Another person, speaking of the immorality arising from drunkenness, remarked, "I dare not tell aloud in the legislature of the country the many vile and revolting practices that I have witnessed in this colony." I rode in an omnibus towards Paddington, to see the many and great improvements that had taken place in that locality, the greater part of which, though now occupied with respectable houses, was six or seven years

ago, the property of the country, and covered with the vegetation of the Australian bush. A very fine exchange had been built since my visit in 1851, also a large hall, and a slender edifice in Hyde Park, for the purpose of ventilating the sewage of the town. I paid a visit to the Museum, when I fell in with a new species of shark, which had been discovered since my last visit, in the neighbouring seas of Port Jackson; the contents of the brute's stomach may be enumerated, as indicative of the voracious and omnivorous appetite and capacious stomach of the marine monster; they were as follow: eight legs of mutton, half a ham, a piece of a pig, the head and shoulders of a dog, three cwt. of horseflesh, a horse-shoe, a ship's scraper, and a small bag; his girth was 9 feet, and his length 13 feet. In the Gulf of Carpentaria it is supposed that there are sharks as large again. Another rather curious addition was a large eel, that had stopped up the water-pipes in George Street. When in the Museum I had the pleasure of an interview with the naturalist, Mr. Angas, who is the discoverer of the bird *Moruk*. Among the newly discovered fossils were the *Zygomaturus trilobus*, and the *Diprotodon*, from Darling Downs. The museum is well stocked with the birds and marsupial animals of the country. The birds are all foreign to the British fauna, except one, and that is very doubtful, viz., a snipe; I have seen it, and told some of the bird-stuffers and naturalists to obtain one from England, and settle the question.

One of the most astonishing things to be met with in the world is the notes and various intonations of the Australian birds. The talented author

of "Never too Late to Mend," whose senses are keenly alive to most things out of the common walks of life, has been so deeply struck with their wonderful powers of imitation, song, and quality of tone, that all the various inflections of their surpassing voices have been reduced to language, and imitated in a regularly written dialect. The habits of some of these birds are as remarkable as their voices. One of the best naturalists of the colony, a clergyman, informed me that a little bird, *Melithriptes*, frequently amused itself with pecking at the hairs of a horse's tail; and upon one occasion, whilst he was preaching, entered the church, lit on his head, and began pecking away at the hairs of his head.

The Botanic Garden of Sydney is a remarkable place, well worth the attention of the traveller, the lover of fine scenery, and, above all, to the botanist. Here the wonderful trees of Australia, shrubs and plants, as well as almost all the vegetable varieties of every other part of the world, are exhibited to the eye of the tourist. Mr. Moore, the director, was out exploring, but I was no stranger to its many advantages and beauties, from having visited it some dozen or more times in the year 1851. I fell in with a very intelligent man, and requested him to point out anything remarkable that they had obtained since that period. He remarked that they had a tree, the *Eucalyptus citriodorus*, which he kindly showed me; this tree, which is a native of the Australian forest, gives out a most exquisite odour, and as a new article of commerce is now employed in scenting clothes or hair, as well as for a general perfume. He showed me another tree, newly discovered in the

Moreton Bay district, named the *Yellow wood*. This was considered by cabinet-makers to possess all those qualities which rendered it, perhaps, the most elegant and beautiful of woods hitherto discovered for the various articles of furniture.

I had an interview with the founder of the city mission, which event took place some seven years ago. He was a temperance lecturer besides. He informed me that the Roman Catholics were extending, and that he believed them to be the most assiduous and persevering religionists, and that they were proselytizing the people in a manner that threatened to make some inroads on the Protestantism of the colony, and remarked, "I don't admire their doctrine, but I cannot help admiring their determined perseverance." If, as I was informed, the present governor of the colony patronized the Roman Catholics by attending one of their bazaars, while he neglected a Protestant one, no act could be more reprehensible. A temperance lecturer, a most excellent and worthy man, was much annoyed by the Roman Catholics when he first began to harangue the people upon their intemperate habits; he was opposed, jostled, and annoyed in every imaginable manner by these unreasonable religionists, when lecturing one evening in the streets of Sydney; but, like a good soldier of the cross, he maintained his ground in spite of their venomous proceedings.

The elective franchise in Sydney is a ten-pound renter,—a man living in hired apartments, or who earns *one pound a week*.



## CHAPTER XVI.

## VOYAGE FROM SYDNEY TO CALCUTTA.

THOUGH appearances were not much in favour of a speedy extinction of the Bengal rebellion, yet as we poor mortals know not what a day may bring forth, I resolved to follow out my original design of visiting the Indian continent, in hopes that circumstances might, on my arrival at Calcutta, enable me to visit a few of the most interesting places on the banks of the Ganges, Jumna, &c. And singular enough, on making the necessary inquiries respecting a passage to India, I was no less surprised than delighted to find that my old friend the good steam-ship *Undaunted*, which had undergone some slight repair at Melbourne, was on the point of sailing for Calcutta, having been engaged to convey horses from Sydney to the capital city of our Eastern empire. I engaged my berth as passenger for the second time; and what was not a little singular, as on my voyage from England to the Antipodes, I was the only one on board.

Everything being ready for a start we quitted Sydney on the 6th of December, and taking the southerly route, kept along the coast in sight of land, until we arrived at Bass's Straits; when a

favourable breeze springing up, we were wafted through them in very nice style, leaving Van Diemen's Land on the left, and Melbourne on the right, and pressing onward for Cape Leeuwin, where vessels proceeding by this course enter the Indian Ocean. Though some of the islands have a romantic appearance, they are but small, and, being without inhabitants, are remarkable only as affording excellent illustrations of geological action. In these straits those individuals which my own county (Lincoln) claims as her sons, have earned reputations which will be transmitted to posterity; these three are—Sir Joseph Banks, celebrated as an Australian botanical explorer; Captain Flinders, the discoverer of Shoal and Moreton Bays, and many other places now of considerable note; and the lamented Sir John Franklin, the explorer of the North-west passage, and for sometime governor of Van Diemen's Land: names destined to live in the page of Australian history.

Though the stern cabin is not a favourite one with many, yet, from the circumstance that deck promenading was an utter impossibility, the greater part of it being required for the horses, I considered myself a particularly fortunate individual in getting possession of it, as from the stern windows I was afforded an excellent opportunity of studying the various phases of ocean life.

Don't be afraid, dear friends, that I am going to torment you with a lengthened narrative of the voyage, for such is not my intention. There are some little incidents, however, that I cannot very well overlook, and amongst others two splendid skies, of which we had a peep during our run.

Upon one occasion the sky and the water were both of an indigo blue, so well matched that it required a true connoisseur to tell the difference. The same evening at sunset large masses of molten gold, with an amber sky, extended over the horizon like a universal blush, whilst the superior part of the heavens were painted with a light and delicate chrysoprase hue, or pea-green. The day after this wonderful exhibition of the works of God was most dull and gloomy. Soon after this I remarked a purple-blue and green sky, and at the same time in different parts of the heavens. Sunday, the 8th of January, we caught the north-east monsoons in latitude 7 deg. N. The wind before this was most disagreeable and changeable, blowing from every point of the compass, accompanied with heavy showers, which so effectually damped and moistened everything, that a cloth coat left wrapped up for two or three days had a coating of mildew. This of all other weather at sea is the most disagreeable, and the most destructive to clothes. When the north-east monsoons set in we enjoyed a most delightful change, the rain ceasing, and fine dry tropical weather following.

We caught the monsoons off the Nicobars, not far distant from the Straits of Malacca. I have mentioned in my voyage out the circumstance of the *Undaunted* being on fire, which by timely attention was very fortunately soon extinguished. During the voyage to India we had a very narrow escape from a conflagration. The funnel got on fire from being dirty one night, at the time an immense number of trusses of hay were scattered all over the poop, and a good deal of

loose hay immediately under the funnel. To this scene I was not, however, a spectator, having retired to bed, congratulating myself on having performed so long a voyage apparently so free from accidents.

The next morning the marks of the fire were visible all over the vessel. The sparks had lit in every direction, and burnt large holes in many sheets of canvas which were spread over the hay, and two or three of the small boats. In one instance a large hole had been burnt in a truss of hay, but most fortunately without setting fire to it. Our escape was little less than miraculous.

Wonderful are the vicissitudes of life on the ocean wave! At an early hour one morning I was summoned by the captain to witness a sight worthy the attention of the traveller. On presenting myself on deck and enquiring why my slumbers had been disturbed at so early an hour, my nautical friend pointed to a vessel sailing in the same direction with ourselves, and with numerous flags flaunting in the wind. The master having made signals of distress, he, on our coming up with him, came on board, and after telling us that he was Captain Westman, of the Swedish ship *Thor*, of Gefle, proceeding to Madras with coals for the Peninsular and Oriental Steam Company, made the following statement, viz., that on the 8th of December he fell in with the American ship *Helen*, proceeding from London to Melbourne with a general cargo and 20 passengers, and she being on fire, he rescued the whole of the crew and passengers, in all 43 persons.

These unfortunates increased most amazingly the daily diet roll. It was to assist him with a little

bread and water that he had signalled the *Undaunted*, and the request was not made in vain, for besides food, a rather goodly supply of clothing was furnished for the poor female sufferers, many of them being dressed in men's apparel. This work of humanity being ended, the *Undaunted* got up her steam, and in a short time had lost sight of the *Thor* and her unfortunate inmates.

From what I personally witnessed, the sunsets in the Bay of Bengal may be ranked amongst the most rare and wonderful, differing as they do from all others which I had until then seen.

The following is a sunrise: The sky at the horizon was magnificently flushed with a gorgeous and glowing orange colour; a little higher the hues were chalcedonic, or streaked like the white part of the agate, united to a tint of the lightest possible blue, joined to a deep-coloured indigo-blue or purple. Beyond this the clouds resembled snow in some parts and ermine in others, united on one side to a dark shade, to complete the picture. Some of these clouds were dark as the blackest smoke. The dark clouds were heavy, massive, and frowning, above which were visible the brightest and most exquisitely delicate tints and streaks of a pink colour, so finely shaped that none but the Divine finger could have drawn such a picture. The sky in other parts was ornamented with agate streaks, behind which the stars and moon shone with a lustre and brilliancy peculiar to these latitudes, soon to be eclipsed by the all-powerful rays of the gorgeous sun, to whom, when he flushed the firmament with his presence, the faint and modest stars made their obeisance, and one after the other retired to their invisible abodes.

Once or twice, in the Bay of Bengal, after the sun had set, I saw, in an opposite direction to the departed luminary, the most wonderful violet tint, which rose to a considerable height above the horizon, whilst the opposite side of the sky seemed as if the universal conflagration of heaven and earth had commenced, from the general blaze that illumined that part of the heavens. As we approached the Hooghley the coast was as flat as a pancake, and the water as dirty as any other river to be found in the world. From its mouth to Calcutta is a distance of some 120 miles. It is eight or nine miles across at its mouth, lessening in breadth as the traveller proceeds inland. Along the whole of this distance, from the sea to Calcutta, the soil appeared, as far as I could judge, alluvial, and one of extreme richness; unusually flat, without a single hill to relieve the monotonous view. The population on both sides was enormous, as at very short intervals villages and houses studded the banks of the river. Their houses were conical in shape—a style of architecture, which, although simple as the common hay-stack, when pointed to the heavens amid groves of palm trees, whose branching tops, terminating abruptly, tended to exhibit to great advantage these simple but, nevertheless, graceful habitations of the Indians. I speak of them as they appeared in the distance. This river from its debouchment to Calcutta, forms, I think, without doubt, taking it altogether, one of the most extraordinary scenes to be found in the world, in more senses than one. The thousands of craft sailing up and down, manned with natives naked as they were born, with the exception of a little linen round

their waists; with skins brown and bright as mahogany, from having been rubbed and anointed with cocoa-nut oil; with vessels of such a shape and form as are seldom presented to the imagination when under the strongest influence of a grotesque and unnatural dream,—form one of the most striking features of the river. India, although possessed of a history and civilization while we were barbarians in bygone times, gives ample proof of having fearfully retrograded, from the cast of countenance and costume (if it can be called such) of the thousands of its natives that swarm on the surface of the river Hooghley. These lowest-caste Indians in look seem more degraded than the savages of any other country. The pilot, an Englishman, instead of being some rough and raw uneducated sailor, in habits and manner had a gentlemanly bearing that would very much improve some of our provincial professional brethren in England, were they to assume the same. Instead of heaving the lead himself, the Hooghley pilot takes with him a person named the *leadsman*, whose exclusive occupation it is to throw the weighty metal into the water. This individual put on his fine suit of linen, perfectly clean and white every morning, and to use a very common but most significant phrase, “thought no small beer of himself.” The tide in this remarkable river flows during the prevalence of certain winds at the rate of ten knots an hour; the various and innumerable deposits taking place in all parts of it requiring watching with the same care by the pilot as a flock of sheep by the shepherd, to prevent those fearful catastrophes which too frequently occur. These sandbanks,

which swarm in the river, are, many of them, quicksands of the most fearful and unheard-of character. When the tide runs at the rate of ten knots the slightest error in steering may bring a vessel in contact with one of these quicksands, in which she is instantly enveloped, leaving her mastheads a few yards above water, as a beacon to others to take warning. Along the course of the river I was eye-witness to too many of these accidents that had occurred at various times. Such is the rapidity of the current that many vessels from merely touching one of these quicksands have been laid upon their beam-ends, and rolled over and then spun round like a top, and afterwards engulfed in this filthy mixture of quicksands and water which constitute this river. On one occasion lying at anchor, my ears were deafened with the almost ceaseless and shrill cries of the jackals. Imagine a careful and cautious traveller for the first time making the passage to Calcutta on the surface of this dangerous river, whose banks, and swamps, and rice-grounds send forth exhalations, fogs, and mists, filled with miasmata, carrying on the wings of the wind the shafts of death, chilling the moral courage at the mere thought, and cooling his physical frame at the same time,—after being exposed to the roasting, baking, and boiling sun, that scorches during the day. It is most dangerous at night for any stranger to inhale these deleterious and obnoxious fogs, one of which I witnessed of the most intense kind. Let us suppose that he is capsized by touching one of these quicksands, and has recourse to swimming for the salvation of himself—ten to one but a shark or a crocodile lunches off him; if he has the good luck



to reach the shore, innumerable tigers, with gaping mouths and hungry stomachs, are ready to dine off him, *sans façon*, after he has manfully buffeted the waves of this deadly river, and had a narrow escape from the sharks and the crocodiles. It appears to me that the chances of death are a thousand per cent. higher in this river than any other part of the world I have previously visited. The very ship in which you sail, instead of conveying you securely, may be an instrument of death by engulfing you in a quicksand. The air that you breathe in other latitudes contains that oxygen which vitalizes everything in the animal economy, but here contains a poison that may strike you down as quickly as the thunderbolt that shoots from the thundercloud. The expert swimmer who may, in nine cases out of ten, save his life by dexterously paddling the water, is almost sure to dive into the alimentary canal of some voracious monster, whose mouth would close upon him as quickly as Jack-in-the-box is confined within the precincts of his prison-house. What chance has a man for his life when the air that he breathes, the vessel that he sails in, the water in which he floats, the land on which he treads, all contain a hungry, universally wide-mouthed gaping, invisible monster, ready to devour him at any moment of time. On the surface of this dirty river may be seen the disgusting dead body of the Hindoo floating down the stream, inflated with water, rendering it a horrible caricature and misrepresentation of what it originally was; with the voracious and carnivorous vulture seated upon it, dining with all the zest of a gastronomist off the

delicate viands of Soyer. This river is the literal cemetery of the Hindoos, and British civilization has not been able, to the present day, to put a stop to this abominable and soul-sickening sight. Such were some of the scenes I witnessed on ascending the river Hooghley, when suddenly a fresh one presented itself to our view—the city of Calcutta. Were Mr. *Punch* to indulge in a trip up or down this celebrated river Hooghley, and in his progress to christen it the *Ugly* River, I should be the first to congratulate the little deformity on his good taste.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## CALCUTTA.

THE pilot having given me a salutary caution, I, on landing at Calcutta, on the 18th of January, 1858, had my head encased in a helmit composed of the pith of an Indian tree, and otherwise protected from the scorching heat of a mid-day sun by a large umbrella. I had scarcely set foot on shore when I was surrounded by the most monstrous wild-looking savages I ever beheld ; all naked, except the little bit of linen round their loins, and apparently ready to fight with each other, even unto the death, for the little money they might acquire in conveying myself and luggage to an hotel. I have been in the company of irritable and cackling hens, squeaking and hungry pigs, hounds in full cry, at the Zoological Gardens at feeding time, with cows lowing for their lost calves, and with jackals on the banks of the Hooghly, and I confess that the noise produced by the animals named on the occasions alluded to, have been music to my ear when compared to the incessant, interminable, and disagreeable vociferations of these noisy natives of the East.

On getting into a palanquin for the first time in my life, I found myself as much at home as a wild bird in a bag. In ascending a hill I was nearly shot out of it, like a cargo of coals out of a cart.

Proceeding to the first hotel, I found all the apartments occupied, and the same thing at the second and the third hotel I visited. Anxious to be sheltered from the mid-day scorching hour, I bade them convey me to a boarding and lodging house, kept by Miss Day, of Dacre Lane, where I found myself very comfortable as far as the eating, drinking, and lodging could contribute to produce that desirable conviction. From extensive travelling for a long period in most parts of the civilized and uncivilized portions of the globe, before landing at Calcutta I did not believe that there was a spot of ground on the face of the earth in which I could be so uncomfortable—yea, even miserable—as I found myself in this City of Palaces; and I believe that every other person at first landing has to undergo feelings somewhat similar to those I experienced. From being at a boarding establishment I was excluded from newspapers, periodicals, and books, which are so necessary for one's instruction as well as pastime. I had no servants to attend to my various wants. If I went out of doors on foot I was afraid of losing myself, or else being sun-struck. I patiently waited, during dinner time, to gather some information about the country from the guests then seated, but all in vain. I waited for them to narrate to me some of the fearful disasters of the war, lest I should touch upon a subject painful to their feelings, from their having some of their relations very recently massacred; but all to no purpose.

Imagine a traveller placed in this predicament, and one accustomed to almost constant mental and physical activity, and I think it requires very little logic to show that such a state is little short of absolute mental and bodily imprisonment, espe-

cially to an honest man who has never been in Bridewell, or one who has not kept company with the inmates of Newgate.

I had letters of introduction to several persons of the highest respectability, without being able to get at them; and when I did I never went near them again, from the difficulty I had in making them out, and even the danger I encountered in visiting one of them, as I had that never-to-be-forgotten river Hooghly to cross, where it is nothing unusual for the native boatmen to keep a stranger in the middle of the stream, simply for the purpose of abstracting his money, at the same time running the risk of being capsized and swallowed either by a shark or a quicksand.

There are no evening amusements in Calcutta—no concerts, no theatres, no casinos, no Punch and Judy, or any other method of wiling away an hour after the business of the day is over. A temporary theatre, consisting of canvas work, far removed from streets and houses, stood on the grass, not a whit better in its external architecture than the common tent of the gold-digger; with this difference, however, that it was a little larger. Entertainment at home, in the shape of balls and dinner-parties, eating and drinking, and chatting after dinner, appeared, as far as I could understand, to form the leading feature of life in Calcutta. The great “meet” before dinner in the meadow or esplanade, where the band plays at the Garden of Eden, is well worth the attention of the traveller in many points of view. It is the Hyde Park of Calcutta, where the pedestrian and equestrian—the one with his tunic and turban, the other in European costume—may be seen side by side in immense numbers and endless variety.

I was recommended to see the Hindoo and Mahometan colleges. After traversing streets innumerable, and rapping at the doors of many large buildings, I utterly failed in finding the whereabouts of the Hindoo college. This will sound ridiculous to an Englishman, but it is nevertheless a fact. Having learned that both establishments were closed, being a *fête* day of either the Hindoos or Mahometans, I hastened home in my *gharry*, a vehicle with one horse, chagrined at having lost almost an entire day without having gained the desired information.

After taking luncheon, I ordered one of the natives, who professed to speak a little English, to tell my driver to take me through all the best parts of Calcutta, as I had been through the Indian and Chinese bazaars that morning, which I supposed without doubt comprehended some of the worst parts of the town. The fellow, instead of taking me where I required, drove me into a quarter of the town where the natives seemed to be living more like degraded animals of the lowest caste than human beings. Unfortunataly for me, at no period of my life has my nose been very remarkable for the possession of first-rate olfactory nerves. Upon this occasion—after traversing street after street, which may be denominated the perfection of pigsties, where squalor, moral and physical degradation of the worst kind, associated with the long, lank, spindle-shanked, miserable-looking Hindoos and Mahometans—a stench rose into my nostrils strong enough to have produced fainting-fits in some, and which would have annihilated an army of delicately nerved people.

I looked right and left, and beheld open sewers containing refuse of the most abominable descrip-

tion, which fully explained the circumstance of my dull olfactories having been so strongly excited. I ceased to wonder at sudden deaths, cholera, fever, and all the horrible diseases that strike their victims in the town of Calcutta more like a thunderbolt than an ordinary European disorder. I was now far away from the Europeans, in the middle of the wild and grotesque processions, whose music, if possible, seemed worse than the stench that surrounded me, alone with a native coachman, who with the innumerable miserable natives could have devoured me in a moment, and besides exposed to the unhealthy exhalations that environed me. I very fortunately knew one word of Hindustani, which was the name of the boarding-house, to which I very quickly repaired, after having made another blunder in which I learnt more of the abominations of Eastern life in an hour and a half than from twenty books upon the same subject—lessons never to be forgotten, because they were thoroughly practical. I had already paid a visit to the Botanic Gardens, and delivered a letter of introduction to Dr. Thompson, who invited me to spend a day with him. The gorgeous, wonderful, and peculiar vegetation that I beheld, would have afforded occupation, amusement, and instruction to a botanist for an entire month. In walking through the gardens I very fortunately met with the banyan tree, under whose shady branches I passed a full quarter of an hour. Although invited to the gardens expressly to spend a day with the doctor, and learn something of Indian botany, from meeting with such ill-luck from not knowing the language, having committed so many previous blunders, and having

the dangerous river to cross, where I should be in the hands of the natives in the middle of the river, and where I might have a dispute, I never paid it a second visit. An Englishman's liberty on first landing seems to be at an end; and knowing the country to be in a condition, the most unfavourable to the traveller, and finding that I was not required to defend the town of Calcutta, by joining the European corps, from the attacks of these miserable wretches, I determined to leave as quickly as possible. I walked one morning early with a medical gentleman to see the Mahometan and Hindoo hospital, one of the finest and most remarkable buildings in Calcutta. It stands high, and towers above the miserable huts that surround it, in a manner best calculated to exhibit its peculiarities as a building. The neighbourhood in which it is placed is one of filth; open sewers containing all the abominations that disgust the senses. Such is the locality selected for the restoration of the health of the natives. That medical men are educated to fear nothing is well proved from the fact of their daily attendance on an establishment of this kind. The building is vast and spacious, more so I believe than any similar establishment in Great Britain, and admirably adapted to carry out the intention of its founders, by skilful medical attendance, good ventilation, and every other requisite except the most essential—that of a healthy and well-drained locality. After I became acquainted with the neighbourhood in which I resided, I walked every morning; and, having only a few days for future investigations, I made the best of my short sojourn by adopting the habits of the English in rising at five o'clock in the morning.



I found this, what might be denominated the ride and promenade, apart (in contradistinction to the grand muster which assembled every day to hear the band play before dinner), a most agreeable time for exercise and recreation. During one of these early matutinal walks I mounted to the top of the Ochterlony monument, situated in a fine grassy plain that bounds one side of Calcutta, where from its commanding position and great altitude, a perfect panorama of the town and environs may be seen. One of the most striking parts of the European town is Tank Square, where all the houses are uniformly built, so as to produce a very imposing effect, in which are placed two vast reservoirs of water, where hundreds of natives may be seen carrying it away, contained in animal skins, instead of the water-cart or the ordinary bucket. These natives are the great water-carriers of the place, there being no pipes laid down. All the refuse of the houses is transported to the river by similar means, the town not being provided with sewers; it has only been recently lit up with gas. Its population is said to be about 600,000; its latitude is  $22^{\circ} 33' N.$ ; longitude,  $88^{\circ} 17' E.$  The Government House, taking it altogether, is a much finer building than Buckingham Palace before it got its new front. One of the amusing sights here is the adjutant, a tall bird, long and lanky in his body, frequently to be found seated upon the head of the British lion, over one of the entrances, so as to resemble an artistic embellishment to the said renowned and savage beast. I thought the thing somewhat ominous at this eventful period—a kind of ornithological hint of the possibility of our being kicked out of the country. I went to

Government House to write my name ; on entering I found five or six doors all barred and bolted like a feudal castle of the middle ages, except one, which, after a considerable hammering and trial after the manner of a policeman first taking his rounds, I managed to move upon its slow and Oriental hinges. I was met by a number of the tunic and turban tribe, to whom I was obliged to make known by signs that I wished to do myself the honour of writing my name in the governor's book ; I was taken to the book by one of these black and white and red gentry, where I met with a European, to whom I signified that if I were not trespassing upon the privacy of his lordship, I should be much gratified in being allowed to see the interior of Government House. I was then handed over to the Hon. Mr. Talbot, the secretary, who forwarded me to Major Bouverie, I think, who was not to be found ; in going from one functionary to the other I traversed the whole of one side of the spacious building, and saw, at all events, a considerable portion of the interior. The major being out, I was shown to the front door without obtaining the permission. From what I saw, without paying particular attention at the time, thinking I should succeed in getting the permission, I should say that Government House, although fine in its exterior, is full of emptiness within. The stranger when he first lands, after having passed Fort William, at a distance of a mile from the town, has to cross the grassy meadow that separates the one from the other ; this is a fine open space, generally without trees, and intersected with some of the most beautiful and best constructed roads—roads in some instances of a red complexion, bounded by a most elegantly con-

structed little wall, made of pillars like a balustrade, quite low down, so as to enable a foot passenger or an adult to look over it. The town of Calcutta as seen from this point of view richly deserves the appellation of a City of Palaces. I was in Paris last year, after leaving Edinburgh with its famous George Street; many years ago I visited Vienna, Munich, St. Petersburg, and all the towns of the great American Union; and I am bound to confess that the town of Calcutta, as seen from Fort William, surpasses in appearance, at the first glance, anything I have ever beheld. From the river which bounds it on one side, to St. Paul's on the other, a frontage of palaces, separated at intervals with open spaces, or ornamented with trees, for a length of three miles or more, presents a scene of grandeur, uniformity, and such unity of design as to far surpass all the towns I have previously seen. Had they been placed contiguous to each other like the houses of a common street, the effect might have been good, but it would still have wanted that palatial aspect, which is the distinguishing feature of the town of Calcutta. But here, alas! the scene ends—" 'tis distance lends enchantment to the view." Approach the palaces, and you look in vain for the well-chiselled stone, fine details, or elegant and tasteful ornamentation. It is an illusion as powerful as conjuration. You stand by the side of dingy-white buildings covered all over with, or rather daubed with, a dirty cement, plastered over bricks that are bad in quality, shape, and colour. They are big, and as ugly as they are big. They are high, spacious, and grand in dimensions, covered with a universal envelope of dirty cement, rendered dirtier still with

the spots of innumerable eyesores. Some of them are well-proportioned giants, very badly dressed, having jumped into clothes badly stitched, badly made, and bad in quality. Some of them in their interiors are not a whit better than immense barns in the old country; the style of furniture, however, is suited to the country. Fort William, on the other hand, seemed to me the converse of these houses,—to be by far the finest specimen of brick-work I had almost ever seen. It extends over a very wide area, and is considered by those who understand it a fine example of the military art of fortification divested of all assistance from the works of nature. I was told by a colonel of the Queen's troops that there were ninety-nine guns capable of being directed to one spot or focus, and that the man who designed it killed himself, or died of mortification, because he could not succeed in covering this particular point with the hundredth. As the traveller lands from the river, passes Fort William and the beautiful grassy plain that separates it from the town, he receives an impression of the most favourable kind, and readily consents to the title that has been given to this metropolis of India, viz., the City of Palaces. But after he has visited the scenes previously described in that part of the town belonging to the native population, he will very soon come to take another view of the subject. Such a mixture of palaces and pigsties—such an amalgamation of Western civilization with Oriental barbarism—such a union of wealth and riches with squalor and poverty—the fine, fair, well-clothed and well-fed European in juxta-position with the almost naked, dark-complexioned native, throw a gloom over the City

of Palaces that reflects but little credit upon the civilization of Western Europe, and less upon the civilization of the Anglo-Saxon. It is a delusion of the most painful kind—a misrepresentation—a picture highly finished in front with gold and glitter, to obscure the scenes of misery and poverty that lie concealed in the background. It is a farce well got up as in a theatre, to look well under the glowing effect of the footlights and the blaze of the gas, but which suddenly vanishes when the true light of day peeps into the many dark caverns and hovels which are found behind the scenes.

I afterwards paid a visit to some of the leading shops in the European quarter, where I found them magnificently furnished with articles, some of which were very costly; such were Hamilton's Nephews, the Pantheon, St. Andrew's Library, and the British Library.

On visiting the Exchange, I found it a spacious place filled with every imaginable article of trade. It appeared to be an establishment of the most hybrid or unharmonious character, made up partly of a London bazaar joined to a warehouse, and having, besides, the contents of a dozen shops all different in their trades—a sort of mixture of everything, with nothing in particular well classified.

Satisfied that in the then disturbed state of the Bengal provinces it would be little short of madness to attempt a visit to any of the cities, towns, or villages on the banks of the Ganges, the Jumna, and their tributaries—rendered doubly interesting to the inhabitants of these lands by the many heroic exploits of their gallant countrymen under their walls—I, with infinite regret, abandoned all idea of making such a minute exploration as

I otherwise intended, and devoted my time to the acquiring of information touching the causes of the Bengal rebellion, and such other subjects as the very limited time I had assigned to myself would permit.

The Andaman Islands having lately attracted much of the public attention—the principal one of the group having been assigned as a place of exile for a considerable portion of the rebellious Sepoys—it may not be out of place here to state (their position, extent, and population, being but imperfectly known to many) that they are situated on the eastern side of the Bay of Bengal; that the Great Andaman is 140 miles in length, by about 20 in breadth, and of very good soil, but the inhabitants, few in number, small in stature, slender in their limbs, blessed with protuberant bellies, are so little acquainted with civilized life that they walk about in Eve's first covering altogether insensible to everything like shame.

The cultivation of the island has never been attended to, the poor creatures being content to live on wild pigs, monkeys, and rats—the only animals known on the island—or on fish, with which the coast abounds. The island is so extremely unhealthy that all attempts at civilization have been completely abandoned.

With some, the greased cartridges was a fruitful topic of conversation, while others laughed outright at the very idea of their being the cause of the defection of the Bengal army. Not a few attributed it to our intermeddling in their religious rites and ceremonies, while others placed it to the credit of a deep-seated Sepoy and Mahometan hatred of England and the English. But it would be a pure waste of time to recapitulate even the

tenth part of all that has been said and written on the subject, for that it was a movement purely political, hastened by the weak state of our European force in India, and by the highly culpable conduct of the Indian authorities in leaving Delhi and other strong military stations under the sole protection of native regiments, is but too evident—a glaring instance of official folly, unmatched in the annals of the world. Had Napoleon I. succeeded in his invasion of England, would he have been guilty of the egregious misconduct of committing the fortifications of Portsmouth or Plymouth to the keeping of English troops? Decidedly not. John Bull has often been held up to the world as the most gullible of all gullible mortals on the face of the earth, and the withdrawing of British troops from Delhi, &c., tends to confirm the fact; for who but the servants of honest John could possibly have been gulled with the belief that the lying and ferocious Sepoy and Mahometan were to be trusted, even in matters of infinitely less consequence than the protection of Delhi, &c., and all their stores, unless watched by a European force. Men may talk until they are hoarse in order to prove that all those who were at the helm of affairs in India eighteen months ago, were equal to the tasks allotted them; the cases of Delhi and others must for ever render all attempts of the kind futile. I know not whom to blame in this matter, but this I do know, that whoever counselled the removal of all British troops from Delhi, &c., must be perfectly unqualified for the discharge of duties devolving upon a person entrusted with the government of such an empire as that of ours in the East; it being a clear and acknowledged fact, that through

the errors committed, either by the governing powers at home or abroad, but for the unsurpassed heroism of our gallant soldiers, our Indian possessions would have passed from our grasp, and for ever.

The land impost and salt monopoly have been held up to view as two of the principal grievances of the Sepoy masses, and consequently fruitful causes of the rebellion. Touching the land impost, it is urged against the Government, that they levy this tax, not on the annual value of the land, but the annual value of the crops—a mode of collection so unjust in its operation, that it virtually inflicts a fine upon the man of industrious habits who has his land in a better state of cultivation than his neighbour. And as to the salt monopoly, one of the most productive branches of Indian revenue, amounting to something like a tenth of the whole, the great source of complaint is, that it compels the masses to pay a profit upon the original cost of at least 300 per cent.—a tax which, however trifling it may be to the wealthy portion of the natives, is felt as a very oppressive burden by the labouring classes. On these two interesting subjects, one who knew India well, the late Mr. Cooke Taylor, writes:—

“Two of the taxes are especially oppressive on the poorer classes, and the East India Company, as well as the British Legislature, are highly interested, or rather bound by every human and Christian duty, to devise some means of relief for the sufferers. The two most oppressive taxes are the land tribute and the salt monopoly. The land tax is more galling to the ryot (the cultivator or tenant) than ever it was under the early Moslem yoke. Then he was asked to give a small



portion of the products of his lands; but the British rule exacts the lion's share. The more he labours, or the greater becomes his crop, the larger is the exaction; for in India, and especially in the Bengal Presidency, the practice is to levy the land tribute on the amount of crop as growing. In India each village, while under the Mahometan yoke, was of itself a little corporation which possessed its inhabitants, and gave them a home, security, and food. But some of the British governors, influenced by the semi-feudal system of the British islands, thought it would be useful to create a landed aristocracy, and they (P. Francis was the father of this scheme) declared the tax-gatherer, or collectors of the revenues, with whom they as rulers had dealings, to be landed proprietors and lords of the soil. The consequence of this novelty was the destruction of the village system in several provinces, and the giving power to men who, instead of using it well, created misery amongst the poor cultivators. The powerful influence of the zemindars (landlords), the imperfect machinery of the British courts, and the facility of obtaining corrupt witnesses, soon gave the newly established landlords an extension of their despotism, which cannot now be easily controlled.

“It is humiliating to the East India Company to find that notwithstanding their extensive conquests, and their boasted civilization, their laws and their courts of justice, and their numerous magistrates, they have not been able to afford complete protection to the ryot against the zemindars. Eighty years ago Governor Verelst, in Bengal, declared his opinion of their oppressions; and it is verified, according to the best evidence, up to the present

hour. The system once introduced, was soon consolidated, and the ryot had no redress; non-payment, oppression, and starvation were the results.

“The English have for themselves abolished the old custom of making an offering every time they approach a great man, and the Company’s officers are prohibited from accepting presents; but the zemindars expect that their ryots shall never approach them empty-handed. Mr. Verelst is a witness of what took place in 1769, as his statements testify: ‘The truth cannot be doubted, that the poor ryots are taxed by the zemindar or collector for every extravagance that avarice, ambition, pride, vanity, or other intemperance may lead him to, over and above what is generally deemed the established rate of rent. If he is to be married, a child born, honours conferred, luxury indulged, presents or fines (nuzzuranas) are exacted; even for his own misconduct, all must be paid by the ryot; and what heightens the distressful scene, the more opulent, who can better obtain redress for imposition, escape, while the weaker are obliged to submit.’

“Thus at the present day, if the ryot cannot find means of making the present in his own family, he must borrow it from another, and has to pay the most exorbitant interest for whatever he receives as a loan.

“The Bengalee is described in England as ‘feeding on rice, and wearing a slight cotton-frock;’ but the fact is, that he lives on coarse rice and salt, for good vegetables and fish would be luxuries to him. His dress consists of a bit of a rag around his loins, and a slender sheet called ‘chudder.’ His bed is a coarse mat and a pillow; his dwelling a low, thatched roof;

his only property an uncouth plough and two badly fed bullocks, and one or two water-pots, called 'lotahs;' with a little seed, called 'beejdhan.' From early morn to noon, and from noon till sunset, he toils; and still he is in appearance and in reality a haggard, poverty-smitten, wretched creature, often for days and nights without food; or having only one miserable meal in the twenty-four hours. The East India Company once had the power of preventing much of this misery; but instead of doing so, the Governors-General of the time riveted the chains on the ryots; and now their present agents cannot find a remedy for the evil which their predecessors established sixty years ago. The land impost, as the part of the crop recoverable by the Government, was at an early Hindoo period fixed at one-sixth, and in times of war the Moslems levied one-fourth; but, as oppression riveted their chains, it has been augmented, so that it now exceeds one-half; and against this oppression there is no redress.

"The abuse of the salt-carrying licences, granted by the emperor of Delhi to the English, was one of the numerous causes of quarrel in Bengal, which ended in the deposition of the nabobs or sovereigns, and the establishment of the Company. One of the first arrangements of the Company's government, after it had secured the collection of the revenue to itself, was to grant the permission to trade in the salt monopoly to the higher servants in lieu of salary. Thus the conquerors of Bengal became monopolists, and brought down upon themselves the indignation and ire of the Court of Directors, who, in the years 1764 and 1765, thus expressed their feelings in a letter to the Bengal

government: 'An unbounded thirst for riches seems to have possessed the whole body of our servants, to that degree that they appear to have lost all sight of justice to the country, and of their duty to the Company.' Lord Clive was at that time sent 'to remedy these evils, and to restore our reputation among the country powers, and to convince them of our abhorrence of such oppression and rapaciousness.' The Company afterwards took the management of the salt monopoly into its own hands, and continued to receive the profits in part of the general revenue.

"The latest official regulation bears date the 30th of March, 1849, which fixes the duty on alimentary salt at 250 rupees per 100 maunds, for five years. The facilities for smuggling are very great, and are not neglected in Bengal, where scruples on such subjects are far from having weight."

Now, although the mode of levying the land-tribute detailed by Mr. Taylor cannot be viewed in any other light by the Sepoy masses than as a serious grievance, still it could not, I conceive, have operated so powerfully on the minds of the ryots, or occupiers, as to stir them up to rebellion against the British rule; their complaints being as loud against the extortions of the zemindars (or proprietors) as those of the Government, without whose powerful aid they could not have hoped for success. And as regards the salt monopoly, though the Sepoys must deem it a most serious grievance, it could not possibly have been one of the causes of the late rebellion, the tax having been imposed at a date long anterior to British sway in that country, and by one of their Eastern despots, to enable him to indulge in every description of vice.

More than hints have been given that the luxurious mode of living which has been introduced into the mess-rooms and barrack-rooms of our Indian officers, was one of the causes of the Bengal rebellion ; that, coupled with the adoption of Eastern customs, having led the Sepoys to believe that their conquerors had become so wedded to their effeminate pastimes, that their spirit must have descended to a point below zero, and, consequently, that they would be more than a match for them. What truth there may be in those hints I will not take upon me to affirm, but as a document bearing somewhat on this all-engrossing subject, I submit for perusal the general order issued to the officers of the Indian army by General the late Sir Charles Napier, leaving to my readers the duty of deciding for themselves.

“SIR CHARLES NAPIER TO THE OFFICERS OF THE ARMY.

“Head Quarters, Camp Ferozepore, Dec. 9th, 1850.

“1. It would neither be justifiable nor becoming in me to interfere with the private affairs of the officers of the army which I have the honour to command, so long as those private affairs don't interfere with the public service. But when they injure the public service—when they reflect disgrace upon our uniform—it becomes my duty to draw attention to the subject, and in this manner to call upon the troops of the Queen's and Company's services to exert themselves in maintaining the honour of their regiments by assisting the Commander-in-Chief in putting a check upon those whose debts are no

less injurious to the fair fame of the military profession than discreditable to their regiments and ruinous to themselves.

“2. It is more than one year since I received a letter from a brigadier upon this important subject; I had then just assumed my present command. I waited to see more clearly how matters stood before I felt justified in touching on matters of so private a nature. From that time to this a considerable portion of my time has been taken up in the examination of weekly, if not daily, complaints against officers for non-payment of debts; and, in some instances, the ruin of tradesmen has been consequent on that cause. There is, therefore, a call upon me for this order—a call which cannot be cast aside.

“3. When it is considered that the army is of immense magnitude, I am bound to say, that the number of officers who have misconducted themselves in a manner so derogatory to the character of gentlemen, is not inordinate; but at the same time it is so large as to demand repression with a strong hand. And I do trust that officers of regiments will take not only vigorous but rigorous measures to bring those who are guilty to a sense of shame at being ordered to appear before a Court of Requests for debt. An officer who is summoned before a Court of Requests must feel conscious that although wearing the British uniform he is not standing there in the character of a gentleman! He must feel, if he feels at all, disgust at his own degraded position. He may, by possibility, have been unfortunate—he may only have been thoughtless; but must feel in his heart that he is before the

public in a group with the infamous; with those who are cheats, and whose society is contamination. A well-bred gentleman cannot support this feeling.

“4. I am not merely a rich man speaking to those who are poor; I have known poverty, and have lived for years on less than half what every ensign in this army receives; and so lived too in a more expensive country than India. I take no merit to myself for this; I only state it as a fact, that I may not be taunted on the threshold of my argument, by being told I know nothing of the difficulties of poverty. I do know them perfectly, and I know more: I know that every ensign can live well on his pay, and that many who have never appeared before a Court of Requests have largely assisted their families—largely, compared to their means.

“5. I do not say that a subaltern officer can give dinners; I do not say that he can indulge in many luxuries; I do not say he should cast off all self-denial; nor do I see why he should do any of these things. The proceedings before these Courts of Requests are the shameful proofs that he should not. When an officer gets a commission he, without that labour which attends the initiation into most other professions, at once receives a good income, and that before he has any knowledge of his trade. In most other professions a young man hardly gets his food at the commencement. The families of many officers, if not of all, have made great sacrifices to gain this amply sufficient income for these officers, and these last have no right whatever to live as if they were gentlemen of landed property, nor as men do who have served longer and gained

a higher rank and greater income than themselves. It is the desire to imitate those above us, and not to regard our own means, that is mischievous to all, and most so to young men.

“6. The result is ruin to numbers. To show this I will quote from two brigadiers' letters, sent officially for my perusal, upon this degrading subject: ‘At the Court of Requests, held on the 6th instant, there were 53 cases, and (with the exception of four of trifling amount) all against subalterns, amounting to 4,875 rupees.’ Again, the same officer writes: ‘Decrees of execution-general are not unfrequent, and the efficiency of the officers seriously affected by their pecuniary embarrassments.’ Again, although I am aware that it is difficult to control the expenditure of officers, yet when they are brought forward thus publicly, month after month, I consider it to be my duty to bring it to the knowledge of his Excellency, the involved circumstances of the officers under my command, with whom, in other respects, I have no fault to find.

“7. Another brigadier writes thus: ‘Another officer I know enjoys champagne tiffins, leaving his servants to drag him before the court for their just claims. How humiliating for those connected with and proud of the profession!’ Yes, it is humiliating; and long experience tells me that it is to the exemplary conduct of regimental officers and to the sentences of courts-martial that the army must look for correcting this baseness in individuals. That the Commander-in-Chief will support the officers of regiments, I may venture to assert, whoever that Commander-in-Chief may be; but the close and dominating power to keep



down such misconduct is in messes. The man must be base in every sense of the word that can bear the contumely of his comrades, incurred by a disgraceful action. But I must not confine myself to messes alone. Commanders of regiments should strenuously exert themselves to maintain the good name of their regiments. They should recollect that Courts of Requests, when they decide that justice to a tradesman or other creditor demands of them to put an officer under stoppages, pronounce that the said officer is a man so lost to all sense of propriety, that he endeavours to defraud his creditors, and therefore can no longer be considered in the light of a gentleman. He is forced to be honourable against his will; and it is the bounden duty of the commanding officer to refuse to such a person all indulgence, and to hold him so strictly in hand that such misconduct on the officer's part may, at all events, be as disagreeable to that officer himself as it is to his regiment and his tradesmen.

"8. That I am not exaggerating these matters I could clearly prove, by publishing such facts to the officers of the two armies as would shock every honourable and honest man, and show how entirely I am authorized in saying that these facts are to the last degree dishonourable. One commanding officer of a regiment writes thus: 'I can confidently assert that the numerous cases brought monthly before the Courts of Requests are a disgrace to the army we belong to.' This is one among many who are labouring for the honour of the service.

"9. I have not sought for this information from officers; these letters came from men of high

rank, both in the Queen's and Company's services, and have been sent to me formally as official complaints. They are men who feel as every officer in the Queen's and Company's service ought to feel.

"10. But while stating how very disgraceful it is for an officer to appear before a court of requests, I will say a few words upon the causes of such conduct.

"11. The first is, that some young men get commissions without having had much education, or perhaps a vulgar one, which is worse. These officers are not aware that honesty is inseparable from the character of a thorough-bred gentleman. A vulgar man, who 'enjoys a champagne tiffin,' and swindles his servants (as a brigadier writes to me when speaking of these matters, and referring to an officer under his immediate command) may be a pleasant companion to those who do not hold him in contempt as a vulgar knave. But he is not a gentleman; his commission makes him an officer, but he is not a gentleman; and I claim that character in all its integrity for the officers of her Majesty's service, and for those of the Hon. East India Company. I speak of men whose own misconduct has brought them into debt—not of those whom misfortune has thrown into debt. These last are very few in number, and very unfortunate indeed to be on the same list with those whom they despise. Of these who are so unfortunate I need not speak; their own exertions to pay their debts are unceasing and honourable.

"12. The second cause is that young men arrive in India, and think that, having escaped

from school, it is manly to be dishonourable. So they cheat the Government by not attending to their duties, and they cheat their tradesmen by not paying their debts. They meet champagne-drinking swindlers, who sponge upon them and lead them into expenses. Thus comes debt—their bankers are at hand to lend money. Thus they become involved past redemption; and soon the habit of being constantly in debt makes them grow callous to the proper feelings of a gentleman.

“13. Now, if all officers commanding regiments were to do their duty (as great numbers do), and if the body of officers of each regiment would give such a commander proper support, this course would not be followed by young men on their arrival in India. By strict lessons in their duties, and plenty of drill, the commanding officers of regiments would prevent Government being cheated; and, by the proper, gentlemanlike conduct and honourable sentiments which should pervade every mess, reprobating expense and extravagance of all sorts, and by practising rigid economy in the establishment, the young officer would at once learn that to drink unpaid-for champagne, unpaid-for beer, and to ride unpaid-for horses, is to be a cheat, and not a gentleman.

“14. The third cause of debt is the constant marching of regiments. This has no remedy in time of war; and I have strongly recommended that it should be as much as possible avoided in time of peace. It is very severe on the troops, and on the State itself. The Governor-General concurred in my recommendation that the troops should not be generally relieved this year; and

I hope none may be moved for some years to come, if the peace continues. However, these marches ought not to throw careful and honourable men into debt. They are, when required, the proper and just demands of the service; and every man can be, and ought to be, fully prepared to meet them. Still, these marches are causes of difficulty; and the difficulties which result from them are in some degree excusable in very young and inexperienced men, but not so in old officers, who have risen to the rank of lieutenants.

“15. The fourth cause of debt is the extravagance of messes. This I entirely charge upon commanding officers. Many regiments (both Queen's and Company's) have economical messes, especially in the Queen's regiments, because the number of officers in the latter is so large. But many regiments are extravagant. And in all cases where a mess is extravagant, the fault lies with the commanding officer. I have heard it said by some, that the commanding-officer ought not to interfere with the mess, which should be considered as the private table of the officers. Now, people who talk thus forget that there is a wide difference between a mess and a private gentleman's table; the last is regulated by his income; and there is but one income and one master to be consulted as to expense. But in a mess there are many masters, and the mess must be regulated by the income of the poorest. The majority have no right to crush the poor and prudent officers, of the extent of whose liabilities they are utterly ignorant. Must an officer, because he belongs to a mess, explain all his dis-

tresses, his misfortunes, his generousities, his follies, to the members of the mess, in order to prove his incompetency to meet their extravagance? Common sense forbids this. Yet, unless the mess is on such an economical footing as to enable the ensign, on his pay, to join it, this infringement on a gentleman's private liabilities and demands must take place; and the commanding officer alone can protect every one under his orders from the often insufferable presumption of mess committees. He alone can properly direct and so rule matters that the ensign can live on his pay, and live becomingly, that is to say, on his pay. I do not call drinking wine or beer, or inviting friends, 'becoming.' It may be so, or it may not, according to the means and feelings of each individual. All I maintain is, that the mess must leave each member free to do as his means enable him; for each officer is individually responsible for his conduct to the public, from which he receives his pay. This is justice—and justice can never be wrong. The pay of an ensign is sufficient for his just expenditure; and the commanding officer is, and can alone be, responsible that this rule of rigid and just economy is never infringed. What officer will go to a mess-committee, and tell his private misfortunes or his difficulties? Yet this is what those people who say that the commanders of regiments ought not to interfere with the mess, want. They are overbearing tyrants, who want to set aside the private affairs of officers, and to make those officers who cannot afford such extravagance, pay for those selfish enjoyments which they want to indulge in at other men's expense.

## CALCUTTA.

That is the real object of those who wish to prevent the interference of commanding officers. But the rules of both Queen's and Company's services give commanding officers the right to interfere; and the Commander-in-Chief will take care to hold him responsible that the ensign has his rights—namely, the power to live at the mess as becomes a gentleman—drinking water if he pleases, or drinking champagne if he pleases; but able out of his pay to liquidate his debts like a gentleman, drinking what he may. That is to say, that the necessary mess-charges leave him enough out of his pay to cover all his other reasonable expenses.

“16. The fifth cause of expense and ruin I believe to be the banks. They afford a ready means to the young and foolish to obtain money, but at an enormous interest. I have heard the objections to banks contested on the score that formerly officers who now borrow from banks borrowed from natives, and even from their own soldiers; that it is, therefore, better for an officer to be in debt to a bank than to natives. I am unable to say what was formerly done; but I am perfectly sure that whatever facilitates the borrowing of money produces ruin to young officers, encourages those vices which are the most mischievous, especially racing—a vice always accompanied by gambling and extravagance.

“17. Some of the evils which I have touched upon may be remedied by the Commander-in-Chief; some by commanders of regiments; some by the officers of regiments as bodies; and some by individuals themselves. To these I must leave them. I can only offer my advice as I quit this scene. To-day I am Commander-in-

T

Chief; a week hence I shall be no more to the armies of India than a private gentleman. But the armies of India must ever be much and dear to me. For nine years my whole energies, such as they are, have been devoted to the honour and glory of the Company's troops. I may say that I have become as much identified with the armies of the three Presidencies as if I had risen from their ranks. I have jealously guarded their honour, and I have fought at their head.

"18. I now leave them for ever. But in the retirement of private life, although no longer able to serve them, the destinies of the armies of India will ever occupy my thoughts.

"19. I here take leave of them, hoping that this order will be of use, as the last which I can give to the armies of India."

What effects were produced by this severe reprimand I know not, but the opinion in certain quarters is gaining ground, that if luxury is not driven from the civil as well as the military circles of India, the same cause which brought ruin upon the magnificent Roman Empire will, at no very distant day, bring about a similar result to our possessions in the Eastern hemisphere.

Although I am one of those who think that the conduct of the Indian Government ought to be based on more Christian principles than it has hitherto been, I cannot shut my eyes to the truth of a remark which I have heard made, viz., that it is one thing to talk of Christian principles far from the din of war, but quite another matter to carry out those principles when surrounded with an overwhelming savage population; that it is a very easy matter to bring complaints against the

troops employed in India for their undue ferocity in battle, &c., but, when put to the test, not quite so easy an affair for a person to bridle his temper when his passions are roused into play with acts of enormous cruelty, and beset with great and imminent dangers on every side; for though the British troops in India may occasionally have exhibited a somewhat larger portion of the Bengal tiger in that country than they have yet done on any European field, that ferocity should not be laid to their charge, but to that of the home authorities who sent them to India to combat against numbers ten times their own; for when ordered to the battle-field or to the breach, the British soldier must go, or receive a coward's reward. Now, I have always thought that there is something preposterous, yea, unfeeling, on the part of the Government of this country continuing to compel a soldier to expose his person to the missiles of ten or twenty opponents, or have his own body riddled by the bullets of his comrades, when, for a small addition to our annual expenditure, the crying evil could be so easily remedied. Those individuals for whose benefit, for the protection of whose property abroad and at home, the soldiers spend the best of their days, and brave pestilence and death on distant and unhealthy shores, must be made to open their purse-strings and come forward with a small per centage of the annual income secured to them by the arms of their gallant countrymen, that such a permanent addition may be made to the military force of the country as will enable the home authorities to increase the army in India to an extent that will enable our rulers in that quarter not only to



extinguish rebellion, but prevent the discontented spirits in any of the three Presidencies from ever again attempting, on a large scale, a similar thing for the future. For, until the army has been reinforced to an extent that will enable the general commanding-in-chief to meet his enemies on more equal terms than the British army in India has ever yet done, deeds of ferocity in action on the part of our gallant defenders *must be expected*, since, without calling into action all the savage, ferocious feelings inherent in the human breast, what chance can a man have for his life when opposed to ten or twenty foes? Our gallant countrymen have often rushed against their foes, and hazarded their lives in many unequal combats, without once enquiring what are the numbers, but where are the enemy; but that this heartless system is about to be abandoned, and for ever, now that it has attracted the attention of the sovereign of these realms, who, being herself a mother—and a good and kind mother—can the more easily fancy what mothers feel whose sons are sent to uphold against frightful odds her supremacy in the East, we require no better proof than that furnished by the speech of the Prince Consort at the Trinity House banquet, in July last, which, without any apology, I herewith submit, satisfied that it must produce on the minds of the soldiers of both the Indian and the British armies the most important results.

On proposing "The Army and Navy of Great Britain," the Prince Consort said: "If this toast must be received by Englishmen at all times with feelings of pride and satisfaction, who could approach it at the present moment, and under

present circumstances, without being impressed with feelings of admiration and deep gratitude for the heroic deeds and sacrifices with which our brave troops are struggling, not only for the interests and the honour of the country, but, I trust, in the cause of civilization, and the ultimate happiness of millions of people, now unfortunately in part our enemies? May the Almighty continue to watch over our gallant countrymen in the East, and may He continue to vouchsafe to them uninterrupted victory. Their heroism and self-sacrifice become most apparent when we consider how small are the means with which so much has been accomplished. The deepest responsibility attaches to us that we should not remain satisfied with the mere enjoyment of the advantages and successes which have been reaped by such self-sacrificing devotion, but, by keeping our two noble services in sufficient numbers, we should take care that the tasks which from time to time may be thrown on them for our advantage may not entail upon them the almost certain immolation of those who are called on to engage in battle."

It is obviously the opinion of a large portion of those best able to form one on the subject, that less than 80,000 British troops will not suffice to restore tranquillity in India, and retain possession of that splendid portion of our Eastern empire, unless the Bengal army can be reconstructed on some such plan as the following :—

It is abundantly evident from what has recently occurred in Bengal that no confidence can in future be placed in the native soldiery but when incorporated with the British regimentally, that

is, that four-tenths of every regiment should be exclusively British, the other six-tenths sepoy, the British to be formed into four, the natives into six companies, each company of sepoy to have two British officers constantly present with it, and the field and other staff officers to be exclusively British. Reconstructed on such a plan as this, the Anglo-Indian army would, for all field or other purposes, be little less efficient than if composed exclusively of Europeans.

At first there might be some little difficulty in carrying out the measure to the requisite extent, but a stout heart and a willing mind will accomplish much. To raise twenty, thirty, or forty thousand men for service in India by the common mode of recruiting, years would be required, unless those British regiments whose services on the reconstruction of the Bengal army would no longer be required in India, were to be allowed to transfer their services to the Anglo-Indian regiments, such regiments completing their numbers on their arrival in England; a measure to which there could be no valid objection, for not only would it be one of sound policy but economy, as the whole of the homeward passage-money of the men volunteering would be saved.

The Government being about to raise four regiments of cavalry, 1,000 men each, for service in India, why not form the intended new levies into ten regiments, each composed of 400 British and 600 Natives, and thereby secure a highly-efficient mounted force of not 4,000 but 10,000 men, up to any service on which cavalry can be employed?

The late rebellion in Bengal has, I should fain

hope, convinced even the most sceptical of our governing body, that our artillery cannot be on too efficient a footing in that quarter—that arm of the service having a most important part to play, not only in the attack and defence of fortified places, but in the defence or passage of rivers and in general engagements; and that it may continue to uphold its present high character, it would, I conceive, be advisable to exclude from its ranks anything in the shape of a Sepoy—the fate of a battle often depending on the heroism and firmness of a few gunners.

Whether the Madras and Bombay military establishments should undergo a similar process is a matter which I will leave to be decided by others better able to judge of the efficiency of the troops of those Presidencies than myself.

The Sepoys knowing the evil effects which the powerful rays of the sun and cholera have upon our troops in India, and being themselves accustomed from infancy to move about in all weathers, without feeling the same baneful effects of their climate as Europeans do, are in hopes, it would appear, of being able during the hot season to seize upon some of our small detached forts, or other military stations, before the garrisons can be succoured. Should not this open the eyes of our Indian rulers to lessen the number of those detached forts, &c., which, in the present state of affairs in Bengal, must, instead of adding to, greatly lessen the strength of our Indian defences?

In 1813 Napoleon was severely condemned for leaving about 100,000 men in garrison in various Prussian fortresses, &c., and thereby completely isolating the whole of them from his main army,

when, by withdrawing the greater portion of them, he might have met his opponents on nearly equal terms—on fully equal terms, indeed—before Austria declared against him. The consequence of this was, that all the fortresses fell one after another, the garrisons remaining prisoners of war, so that he finally lost his hold of the Prussian fortresses, and his 100,000 men besides; when, had he withdrawn the troops in the early part of 1813, he of course would have lost the strongholds, but saved his 100,000 men—a host of itself wielded by such a master in the warlike art.

These remarks are occasioned by the present state of our possessions in India. We have been in the habit of keeping possession of numerous small forts for purely political purposes—a system which tends greatly to weaken our army in that quarter, and on any occasion of mutiny, &c., renders it almost impossible to prevent the garrisons of those places from falling into the hands of the enemy. It is to be hoped that a similar system will not be pursued on the present occasion, but rather raze a portion of them, and, if necessary, enlarge the others so as to be capable of receiving a larger garrison within their walls. In this view of the case I am borne out by one than whom no better judge in such matters ever lived—I mean the late Duke of Wellington, who, in a letter to Lord Clive, writes: “The question which your lordship has put to me involves considerations affecting the *whole of our military system in this country*. When the country proposed to be ceded to the Company is likewise to be defended, its inhabitants to be kept in tranquillity, and its revenue to be realized, by means

of the troops, it is impossible to expect to be able to effect these objects on the system of *weak and dispersed garrisons*, on which we have been acting hitherto. *This must be changed*; neither the new territory nor the old can be kept in awe by *troops dispersed in forts which they cannot quit with safety*; and, therefore, the system which I should recommend would be to garrison those forts only which are absolutely necessary to us, and to have at all times in the field and in motion two or three regiments of Europeans, all the cavalry, and as large a body of native infantry as can be got together. This will be a real security, not only to the new territory and to Mysore, but to the Carnatic, Malabar, and Canara, *and nothing else ever will*. It will appear more clearly that this system is necessary in the new territory, when the nature of its inhabitants and the governments to which they have been accustomed are considered." May the Indian authorities profit by the remarks of the unconquered Duke, for the opinion of that general, who was victorious in all his many battles, should not lightly be thrown aside. Had our home authorities ten years ago attended to the warning given them by the gallant chief, respecting the national defences, our ears would not have been insulted a few months ago by the loud boastings of a few French colonels.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## INDIA.

EVERY little piece of information bearing upon the state of India, past and present, being of surpassing interest to the people of these lands, a few fragmentary portions of the ancient history of Hindostan may not be unacceptable, as they will enable all those who may cast their eyes on the pages of this volume to judge to what extent the inhabitants of that portion of the East have either retrograded or advanced in the arts and sciences.

“The Institutes and Code of Menu, which were composed 300 years after the Christian era, are to be received as the earliest authoritative expositions of the faith and worship of the Hindoos; and, early as is the period at which we must fix the date of this code, it was necessarily posterior to the age of the Vedas themselves, the truly sacred books to which it constantly refers as furnishing the text of all its commentaries. These sacred hymns or poems—for such the Vedas are—had, before the time of Menu, been received with the profoundest reverence as the infallible oracles of truth, and their precepts and commands as

binding on the faith and conscience of the Hindoos. These Vedas, or sacred poems, were composed 1,200 years before the Christian era."—*Macphail's Edinburgh Ecclesiastical Journal*, No. 34, March, 1857. The Hon. Mountstuart Elphinstone's "History of India," at page 49, remarks: "It might be easier to compare them [speaking of the Indians] with the Greeks as painted by Homer, who was nearly contemporary with the compilation of the code; and, however inferior in spirit, and energy, as well as in elegance, to that heroic race, yet, on contrasting their law and forms of administration, the state of the arts of life, and the general spirit of order, and obedience to the laws, the Eastern nation seems clearly to have been in the more advanced stage of society. Their internal institutions were less rude, their conduct to their enemies more humane, their general learning was much more considerable, and in the knowledge of the being and nature of God, they were already in possession of a light which was but rarely perceived even by the loftiest intellects in the best days of Athens." In the year B.C. 1442 they possessed a knowledge of astronomy quite as advanced, and perhaps superior to the Greeks. In Elphinstone's "History" (page 129), he says: "The progress made in other branches of mathematical knowledge was still more considerable than in astronomy. In the 'Surya-Sedanta,' written, according to Mr. Bentley, in A.D. 1091 at the latest, but generally assigned to the fifth or sixth century, is contained a system of trigonometry, which not only goes far beyond anything known to the Greeks, but involves theorems which were not discovered in Europe till the sixteenth cen-



ture." "In the useful arts," says the same author (page 163), "the most remarkable is that of cotton cloth, the beauty and delicacy of which was so long admired, and which in fineness of texture has never yet been approached in any other country. Their silk manufactures were also excellent, and were probably known to them, as well as the art of obtaining that material, at a very early period. Gold and silver brocade were also favourite, and perhaps original, manufactures of India. The brilliancy and permanency of many of their dyes have not yet been equalled in Europe. Their taste for minute ornament fitted them to excel in goldsmiths' work."

Their way of working at all trades is very simple, and their tools very portable. A smith brings his small anvil, and the peculiar sort of bellows which he uses, to the house where he is wanted. A carpenter does so with more ease, working on the floor, and securing any object with his toes as easily as with his hands. About 160 years after the reign of Darius Hystaspes, Alexander the Great undertook his great expedition into India; he did not penetrate farther than the Punjaub; indeed, he did not traverse the whole of that country, having been compelled to turn back by a mutiny of his troops on the banks of the Hyphases. The armament thus prepared was so great and magnificent as to be worthy of such a commander as the conqueror of Asia. It consisted of 2,000 vessels of various sizes, 120,000 men, and 200 elephants. As the conqueror pursued his course along the streams of these great rivers, the nations on both banks were compelled to submit; but for the first time in the annals of

history, the march of civilization accompanied the progress of military triumph — cities were founded, commercial marts were established, and an active intercourse opened with the unknown nations of the remote interior. It took nine months for Alexander to descend to the mouth of the Indus, a distance of more than 1,000 British miles; but the delay was occasioned by the prudent determination of that monarch to leave nothing unexplored or unattempted which would advance the great and noble project of uniting the Eastern and the Western world by the bonds of mutual trade. They had a philosophy in later times, which, Mr. Colebrooke argues, resembles that of the earlier rather than that of the later Greeks, and that, if the Hindoos had been capable of learning their first doctrines from a foreign nation, there was no reason why they should not in like manner have acquired a knowledge of the subsequent improvements. From which he infers that the Hindoos were, in this instance, the teachers, and not the learners. The first appearance of the Mahometans in India dates as early as A.D. 664. The supposed or implied vassalage of the East India Company to the nominal padishah, or Mahometan ruler, of Delhi was finally terminated by Earl Amherst in 1827. So ended the glories of the Moslem emperors at Delhi.

Such was India in the olden time. Let us see what the extent of our empire in the East is at the present day; what the amount of its debts and its revenue; and what improvement is likely to take place in that magnificent portion of our colonial possessions. First, then, as to its extent:

it appears that the total area of British India, as it now stands, including Scinde, the Punjaub, the Jullender Doab, and Tenasserim, has been estimated by competent authorities to contain 800,758 square miles, which, with the native states, estimated by the same authorities at 580,442 square miles, make a grand area of a million and one-third square miles. This vast superficies extending over 1,370,000 square miles, includes every variety of configuration and climate. It is twelve times as large as the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and is inhabited by 165,000,000 of human beings; and, if properly cultivated and governed, is capable of sustaining four times that number.

Some time since, Mr. Roebuck, in one of his speeches on India, declared the population to be 200,000,000; but from recent debates in the two Houses of Parliament, I am inclined to think that it is nearer 165,000,000 than 200,000,000.

Respecting the debt of the Company in India, its actual amount, according to the official accounts of 1850, was as follows;—

Bengal debt . . .	Co.'s Rs. 44,57,00,682	
N.W. Provinces . . . . .	37,48,375	
Madras . . . . .	90,98,986	
Bombay . . . . .	1,29,62,141	
	<hr/>	
	Co.'s Rs. 47,15,10,184	
In English money, at 2s. per Sicca rupee		£44,204,080
The bonded debt in England . . . . .		3,920,592
Miscellaneous debts in England, in excess of assets		1,257,725
Capital of the Company . . . . .		6,000,000
		<hr/>
Total . . .		£55,382,397

And the revenue of the different Presidencies,

which, according to the estimates laid before Parliament, is received from the mint duties, the post-office collections, the stamp duties, excise duties, judicial fees and fines, miscellaneous civil receipts; from the land revenue, the imposts duties, called *sayer*; from the duties and taxes levied on the manufacture and sale of spirituous liquors and intoxicating drugs, known as *abkarree*; from the revenue miscellanies; from tribute paid by the ceded districts; from the customs, the monopoly of salt, the sale of opium, marine and pilotage duties, and marine and dock dues,—was estimated, at each of the following establishments, in the year 1850, as follows:—

Bengal (including the receipts of the Prince of Wales Island, of Singapore, and Malacca, together with the subsidy of 8 lacs from the Nagpore Government, and 12 lacs from the Nizam, and the tribute from the Rajpoot and other states) gives the net sum of	Co.'s Rs.	8,72,36,862
The North-Western Provinces produce . . .		5,08,03,000
The Punjaub, with the trans-Indus territory . .		1,35,05,000
Madras revenue . . . . .		3,77,92,794
Bombay revenue . . . . .		2,63,63,170

---

Total revenue of India . . Co.'s Rs. 21,57,00,826  
 In English money, at 2s. per Sicca rupee . . . £20,221,952  
 Leaving this year an estimated surplus of £64,809.

These figures enable us to bring into view some rather startling facts. Estimating the population of India at 165,000,000, it is evident that if each one of the 165,000,000 were called upon to make good the debt of £55,382,397, seven shillings would be the utmost farthing they would have to pay; while each inhabitant of the United Kingdom would, under similar circumstances, have to

pay £30, in order to liquidate the present debt of this country. And yet, with all our debt, the squalid misery of the East as far exceeds that of the three kingdoms, as the debt of the latter exceeds that of India. Now, how is this? It cannot be from heavy public taxation; the population of India being taxed to the amount of half-a-crown each, while the inhabitants of these lands are taxed to the extent of £2 10s. each, exactly twenty times more than the Eastern subjects of the British crown. To what then is such a state of things in the Eastern world to be attributed? We may perhaps see by-and-by.

Touching the improvement of our Indian finances, a late author, already quoted, writes: "To the East India Company and to the British Government the question of improvement in finance is one of vital moment. To the former every improvement must be of paramount importance, especially now, when it has been publicly said, that, in consequence of the Company's treasury being unable to meet all the demands for ameliorations in India, many beneficial measures contemplated by the Court of Directors and by the different Indian governments are in a state of abeyance. To meet the exigencies of this period a plan, based on the clearest and strictest principles of the science of finance, has been proposed by the writer of these lines—who has, as he trusts, proved in this book that he understands the actual state of India—to the consideration of various of the leading personages of the British legislature, to Lord John Russell, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, to the Right Hon. Sir George Grey, the

Right Hon. T. Milner Gibson, and to Messrs. Cobden, Bright, Hume, and even to the House of Commons.\*

“The opportunity is alone wanted to enable the author of the plan to increase the revenues of India, without any oppression whatsoever, to treble their present amount; and thereby afford to the East India Company the most ample means of doing to the natives of India all the good they desire. The sound principles of science on which this plan is based demonstrate that no other efficient measure can ever be discovered for relieving the distress of British subjects, as well in India as in Europe. This notice of the plan is introduced into this history in order that posterity may hereafter learn that there exists at the beginning of the second half of the nineteenth century one man, who being thoroughly aware of the wants and wishes of his fellow-subjects in India and throughout the British empire, understands how, and is willing, nay more, is anxious and eager, if adequately supported, to promote by efficient means the welfare of all those who are subject to the British sovereign; that is, including the inhabitants of the East Indies, at least one-fourth of the whole human race.”

What the plan was which Mr. C. Taylor recommended to Ministers for the improvement of Indian finance does not appear; but as that was embodied in the petition presented to the Government last April, and as an improvement in the finances of the East to even one-half of the extent mentioned by the author would work wonders, as

\* A petition on the subject was presented in April last.

far as the Eastern population are concerned, would it not be a very fitting duty for a member of the Lower House to undertake to move for the production of the petition, or such information as would show whether the plan is such as would, if carried out, fulfil the author's anticipations; and if so, whether there is any intention of carrying it into full effect.

Having offered a few remarks on the best mode of reorganizing the Bengal army, and providing for the defence of our Indian possessions, against foreign aggression or internal convulsion, let us devote a few moments to the consideration of the best method of making the soil of that extensive region yield additional supplies of food for its inhabitants.

Many plans have from time to time been proposed; but from what cause I cannot tell, not one plan of any magnitude has yet been attempted. That something has not been done to bring the fertile inland provinces nearer to the ocean is the great wonder in the capital of the Eastern world. Had the attention of the Government been directed to this all-important subject but twenty years ago, instead of engaging in foreign wars and annexing new states to our already overgrown empire, how very different might the face of the country be at present; a large portion of the soil being capable of producing six or eight times more food for man and beast than it has ever yet done since it came under our sway.

Three things appear to be absolutely necessary before any improvement of the kind mentioned can be expected, viz., an extensive system of irrigation, of internal and railroad communica-

tion ; and improvement of the common roads in the districts not intersected by either canals or railroads ; for, unless the occupier of the land can find markets for an additional supply of grain, &c., at remunerating prices, it is not to be expected that he will be so imprudent as to increase his supplies of grain that the most unprofitable of a nation's consumers of grain may live more luxuriously. Various works on this subject have lately appeared ; but we have no hesitation in giving the preference to that of Colonel Cotton, from which we hope we shall be excused for giving a few extracts. Touching irrigation, railroads, &c., the Colonel writes : "The savages of Australia trod upon gold for hundreds of years while they were often in want of food and always without a rag of clothes. Very similar has hitherto been the state of things in India : with an unlimited supply of water within reach, which would more than provide for every possible want, the people of India have been generally barely supplied with the necessaries of life, and often so entirely without them as to perish by hundreds of thousands ; whilst their European rulers, though possessed of this treasure, of far greater value in proportion to the cost of obtaining it than the richest gold-mine in the world, have been unable to make their income equal their expenditure. It seems as if in India men had universally jumped to the conclusion, that because water is immensely valuable, it therefore must be immensely costly, without stopping to enquire what its cost really is. A person in India, in the midst of the hot season, naturally forms in his mind an idea of the immense value of water ; and it does not readily



occur to him that what is so valuable may at the same time be the cheapest thing in the world; just as it was at Port Phillip, when the last thing that men were inclined to suppose was, that many tons of so valuable a thing as gold should be under their feet. Port Phillip has been loaded with wealth, by discovering a thing which can be obtained at one-fourth of its value, while India continues poor with a thing which can be obtained at one-fiftieth of its value.\* What is the difference between the two countries that produces such a strange anomaly? The sole reason is, that the Port Phillipians make use of their treasure, which the Indians, or rather European rulers, do not. A man in Port Phillip, who could earn previously £40 a year on an average, went to the diggings and obtained in one year about £140 worth of gold. As soon as this was known more than half the population were employed in digging gold, and last year they obtained about fourteen millions sterling. In India, supposing that at this moment 25 lacs (£250,000) a year are being spent in new hydraulic works, we may calculate that about 60,000 people are so employed, or not more than  $\frac{1}{3500}$ th part of the population, and not a  $\frac{1}{1000}$ th part of the proportion employed in Port Phillip, in securing the treasures there discovered.

Nothing, therefore, can be more evident than that it is not the having a treasure in the country that makes it rich, but the taking advantage of it. It was not the gold under the ground that

\* It has been estimated that every man employed at the diggings obtains on an average 50 oz. of gold, worth £190 a year.

made Port Phillip rich, since the people were none the better for it for many years; but rather the digging it up, and giving it in exchange for consumable things, &c. In the same way India will continue poor, even if water were ten times its present value, so long as it is not made use of, but still allowed to flow into the sea by millions of tons per second. The quantity of water that flows off in this way by the Godavery per day, is sometimes so great as to be worth 80 lacs (£800,000), or three times the whole revenue of Rajahmundry for a year; but till it is made use of, the country continues just the same as if it had no such treasure. How strange it seems, that whilst the dullest labourer can perfectly understand the value of gold, the wisest statesman cannot perceive the value of that which is exchangeable for gold; so that, though £100 worth of gold in the form of water can be obtained in India at a cost of £2 10s., no Indian statesman has been found wise enough to set a thousandth part of the population at work to obtain it; whereas, in Port Phillip, when it was discovered that £100 of gold could be obtained for £25 worth of labour, more than half the population were immediately employed in digging it up. Whenever this subject is started their defence is, "But see what we are now doing; look at the Ganges canal, and the Godavery and Kistnah works." Suppose the Port Phillippians had continued as poor as they were, and upon somebody taunting them with neglecting their great treasure, they were to say in defence, "What shameful misrepresentations; out of our 60,000 people we have got twelve digging at Ballarat and at Mount

Alexander ;" what should we think of their sense and activity ? And yet twenty-four diggers bear the same proportion to the population of Port Phillip as 60,000 employed in hydraulic works bear to the whole population of India. Upon what imaginable principle is it then that only certain parts of three or four districts out of a hundred are to be thus improved ? The objection of want of money has been shown over and over again to be without a vestige of foundation. Did the Port Phillipians wait till they were rich before they went to the diggings ? How many of those who traversed the country to reach the spots where this treasure was known to be, had any surplus cash ? They went there because they were poor, not because they were rich. And the case is exactly the same in India.\* In fact, the sole reason why England has hitherto bought its millions of bushels of wheat and hundreds of thousands of tons of cotton from America, is because both the States and Canada have at an enormous expense formed water communications from the valley of the Mississippi and made a proper use of their rivers, which we in India have not done, excepting in the case of the Ganges, which has only been used because the natives used it before we came. The United States spent eight millions sterling on the Erie canal, without which (on the St. Lawrence navigation) not a bushel of wheat could have gone from the Upper Mississippi to England ; while if we had spent £70,000 on the Godavery, we

\* Public Works in India: their Importance; with Suggestions for their Extension and Improvement. By Lieut. A. Cotton. Pp. 169; 209; 10, 11.

could have supplied all England with wheat and cotton.

The present state of the canals, rail, and common roads, in India, and the means of transit which they furnish to the inhabitants from one place to another, or from the interior of the country to the sea, being but imperfectly understood in this country, the following remarks of Colonel Cotton on these subjects may be consulted with advantage.

After telling us that at the date at which he wrote, the system of railroads was progressing at the rate of *ten miles* per annum, costing £12,000 per mile, the Colonel proceeds to show the advantage of common roads over the present railroads of India, and that water communication and low-speed railways are preferable to the present expensive ones, as follows:—

“The ordinary cost of transit, when there are no made roads, is, in the practicable season, from two to three annas (3d. to 4½d.) a ton per mile, with the incalculable disadvantage of traffic being almost completely stopped during three or four months of the year; and, allowing only a trifle for the latter, we may fairly reckon the average cost of transit at three annas (4½d.). Of the effect of good common roads in cheapening transit we have proofs in different parts of the country; for instance, on the Grand Trunk Road of Bengal the cost of transit has been reduced to eight pice (1d.) per ton per mile; and on the Great Western Road from Madras it is even now little more than one anna (1½d.); but the latter is not yet by any means in complete order, and the price will undoubtedly fall still lower. From these examples

we may take the average cost of transit on a thoroughly good common road at nine pice ( $1\frac{1}{2}$ d.) or one-fourth of the present cost; showing a saving of  $2\frac{1}{4}$  annas (about  $3\frac{1}{4}$ d.) per ton per mile; and as regards the cost of such a road—the Grand Trunk Road in Bengal having cost about 8,000 rupees (£800) a mile; the Western Road from Madras (a badly planned road) about 7,000 rupees (£700); and others in Madras from 3,000 to 4,000 rupees (£300 to £400) a mile—we may therefore take the average cost throughout the country generally at about 5,000 rupees (£500) per mile, the Grand Trunk Road being a wider and more complete work than would be generally necessary. And, on the other hand, the average cost of a mile of first-class railroad may be taken at 120,000 rupees (£12,000); a sum that would make twenty-four miles of first-class common road. Nothing, therefore, can be more delusive than when thus carrying on a work which will take hundreds of years to accomplish [meaning the present railroad system] to imagine that we are really gaining our object. What is the use of going a hundred miles at the rate of thirty-four miles an hour, if we must then go on at three miles an hour over thousands of miles? India can be enabled to supply England abundantly and cheaply with two essentials—flour and cotton; and nothing whatever prevents India doing so at this moment but the want of public works. If only the country were, by means of irrigation, enabled to produce food as cheaply and abundantly as it could easily be made to do, and if by means of communications its produce could be cheaply conveyed to the coast, then Man-

chester is safe ; for its supply of two things, upon which its very existence depends, cannot fail. But while three-fourths of the people of India are employed in raising food, and one-eighth in carrying their produce over the unimproved face of the country, at a cost that would instantly paralyze England if subject to such an incubus, this magnificent appendage to England must be comparatively lost to her, and the prodigious and incalculable stimulus that it might give to her manufacturing and general prosperity must be in a great measure lost. The only way that I ever heard this neglect of such a country by her rulers satisfactorily explained, was by a shrewd friend, who said,—‘ Sir, the fact is, that such a country, with its immense population and unbounded capabilities, would, if it had been managed by the smallest degree of European energy and intelligence, have thrown such amazing means into the hands of England as totally to destroy the balance of power, and place her so immeasurably ahead of all other countries as would have made her mistress of the world.’ The advocates for high speed say, ‘ Let us have a thoroughly good speed at once ; ’ and then they proceed to attain their end by laying down in one corner of India a few miles of grand railroad, along which you may travel for the first stage at thirty miles an hour, and then continue along the remaining thousand miles of your journey at three miles an hour ; if, indeed, the monsoon permits you to move at all. At Bombay only ten miles has been laid in one year ; so that ten years hence a traveller going from thence to Calcutta might go the first hundred miles in three hours, but must take seventeen

days (travelling day and night) for the remaining 1,200 miles; his average speed being  $3\frac{1}{4}$  miles per hour. Only two of their lines are yet begun; and as to really and effectually opening India, we are in reality doing nothing; or rather, worse than nothing, since this delusion makes people imagine that they are doing what has to be done, and thus prevents them setting in earnest about the right means. If the construction of a few hundred miles of grand railroad in the course of twenty years, so blinds people as to prevent anything effectual being done to open India, it will, instead of a blessing, be the greatest curse which in the present state of things the country could suffer.

“Railroads, probably, never can supply the place of water communication; because, as far as yet appears, the cost of working them will far exceed that of navigable rivers or canals. Railways cannot contend with canals in cheapness, even where they have the immense advantage over them of steam power; and steam canals, such as are now in use in Canada and the United States, are worked so cheaply as to leave scarcely any possibility of railroads ever competing with them in this respect; which is the main point as regards the great mass of traffic everywhere. It is from a misapprehension on this point, I conclude, that even when the subject was so nearly brought forward, in consequence of the canals of the North-West being led off from navigable rivers, it still escaped thorough investigation; although a few minutes' calculation would have shown that the subject was well worthy of the closest scrutiny. The Ganges is the grand artery of Bengal and the

North-West Provinces, and upon cheap transit by means of it, hangs the whole present state of things there. Not a tenth part of the goods carried down it could bear the cost of 500 miles of land carriage, nor even the doubling of the present cost, four pice ( $\frac{1}{2}$ d.) per ton per mile; so that without this cheap line the trade of Calcutta and the revenue of Bengal and the North-West would fall to a small fraction of what they now are. There can be no shadow of a question that what is most wanted at present, is a system of works that will materially reduce the cost of transit over a large extent of country; rather than one requiring a large expenditure for a very small extent of communication, however perfect that small extent might be made. I am certain it cannot require five minutes' consideration, to show to any person who is willing to learn the real state of the case, that to expend in communications of any kind, so large a sum as a lac of rupees (£10,000) per mile, or even one-fourth of that sum, is a complete mistake. If it be said, that in these calculations no account is taken of the passenger traffic, I answer, 'because that does not materially affect the question.' If goods can be carried cheaply at low speeds, travellers can also; and the number who could afford to pay high for a speed above 150 miles a day, is so insignificant as not to stand a moment's comparison with the benefits of cheap carriage. And further, by cheap communications, higher rates of speed will on the whole be obtained; for a man will pass quicker over a distance of 2,000 miles by means of a low-speed railway alone, than by means of 80 miles of high-speed railway and 1,920 of unmade road.



There are certainly not less than 5,000 miles of river navigation that can be made very good, so as to be worked at two pice ( $\frac{1}{4}$ d.) per ton per mile; and for this a capital of only 50 lacs, or half a million sterling, would be required. If any one thinks that it would be more profitable to shareholders, or more beneficial to the community, to have 50 miles of high speed railroad for the same money, he must have a mode of coming to that conclusion different from any I am acquainted with."

#### RELATIVE COST OF TRANSIT IN INDIA AND ENGLAND.

"A pound of rice in India costs about 3 pice, or  $\frac{3}{8}$ d., and the same quantity of the flour of other grains about 2 pice, or  $\frac{1}{4}$ d. Taking the cost of flour in England at  $1\frac{1}{2}$ d. a pound, the value of money, as shown by the value of food, may be taken as six times as great in India as in England; and if we try by the cost of labour, taking it in its simplest form, we find that a cubic yard of earth may be dug and carried to a bank ten yards off for about  $\frac{3}{4}$ d. on an average in India, against about 6d. in England. The same with other kinds of labour; and it will be near enough for our present purpose to take the value of money in India at six times what it is in England, on an average; though, over a great extent of country like India, it is as much as 8 to 1. We may therefore reckon the Indian rates of tonnage as equivalent in England to

	6d.	per ton	per mile	by sea.
	$3\frac{1}{8}$ d.	ditto	ditto	by river.
	9d.	ditto	ditto	by good roads.
1s.	6d.	ditto	ditto	by imperfect roads.
2s.	$7\frac{1}{8}$ d.	ditto	ditto	on unimproved roads.

Is not this alone quite sufficient, without a word more, to account for the impoverished and backward state of India? The average of all the traffic in India cannot be less than 1s. per ton per mile, allowing for the difference in the value of money, while in England the average cost of transit may probably be taken at  $1\frac{1}{2}$ d., or one-eighth of that of India. We may safely allow, therefore, that in general goods are carried six times as far in India from the place of production to that of consumption or of export, as they are in England; so that, combining this with the cost, there is in India thirty-six times as heavy a charge upon transit as in England.

“The following are some of the English rates:

Liverpool to Manchester, 3d. a mile per ton, railway.

London to Birmingham,  $\frac{4}{3}$ d. ditto ditto, canal.

Liverpool to Birmingham,  $1\frac{1}{2}$ d. ditto ditto, railway.

“If India is to advance in anything, it must have cheap transit—really cheap transit—at one-tenth or one-twentieth part of the present rates. In planning the great railways, the real points to be attended to have been entirely lost sight of; and this first one especially. When the projectors talk of charging 1d. to 3d. per ton per mile, they do not consider the fact, that a good common road will carry at  $1\frac{1}{2}$ d., and that the imperfect, unimproved natural water transit, where it exists, costs only  $\frac{1}{2}$ d. In the Bengal reports they make out that the river transit costs 9 pice, or  $1\frac{1}{3}$ d. per ton; but this is more than double the real cost. One of the fallacies in the calculation is, that interest is charged upon all goods as being worth £40 a ton; whereas the great bulk of the traffic is either grain, value £3 a ton; salt, £3; sugar,

£12 or £15 ; saltpetre, £18 ; and iron, £10 ; so that probably not one-twentieth part of the goods is worth £40 a ton. What we have now to do is to discover means whereby the cost of transit may be materially reduced, so as to give a real relief to the country, and enable it to compete with other countries. Till this is accomplished, nothing is done. All our immense advantages of soil and climate, and cheapness and abundance of labour, are lost ; or, at least, the greater part of them. This is well known in the state of the Berar cotton trade, in regard to which it is stated, by those who have the best means of knowing, that cotton is actually grown and sold on the spot at  $\frac{1}{4}$  anna (or  $1\frac{1}{4}$ d.) per lb. To this about  $\frac{3}{4}$ d. (half an anna) is added in bringing it into the great cotton marts of the district where it is cultivated ; fully 1d., or  $\frac{2}{3}$  anna more, in conveying it to Bombay, and still more in taking it to Calcutta. Another penny is added in bringing it into the English markets ; and thus it arrives at Manchester, at a cost that only puts it on a par with American cotton, grown by slave labour at an enormous expense. It is not merely that for the want of cheap transit, a direct charge of a penny or more is added to the cost of the cotton ; but for the same reason, food, salt, &c. are three or four times the price they need otherwise be. I am satisfied, as I have stated, that the money now paid for transit, and lost for want of it, in India, is in fact equal to the whole amount of taxation. On almost every line in India the cost can be reduced to one-fifth or one-tenth of what is at present contemplated by the great railways."

In a country like India, where the drought and

the heat is so great for many months of each succeeding year, and the soil so fertile, the value of an extensive system of irrigation cannot possibly be estimated. In this our moist climate, irrigation has in many places worked wonders; what might not therefore be expected from it, if carried out in the plains of Hindostan on a scale worthy of this great country? At present, any attempt to improve the land by irrigation is not to be expected; but as the back of the rebellion is now said to be broken, the pacification of the country will, it is hoped, speedily follow, when the work of improvement can be entered upon with every prospect of being carried on to a successful issue. Colonel Cotton's remarks on this subject being well worthy of perusal by all who take an interest in agricultural operations, no apology, I conceive, is needful for inserting the following:—

“Food is grown with less labour on irrigated than on dry land. The less labour is required for growing food, the more remains for all the comforts and conveniences of life. Therefore the whole food of the community should be grown on irrigated rather than on dry land. The only district that has invariably prospered, and increased in wealth and revenue, Tanjore, is the only one that has been anything like fully irrigated. The portion at present irrigated (about  $2\frac{1}{2}$  million acres) pays a revenue of 130 lacs (£1,300,000), even with the present defective means of irrigation; whilst the unirrigated land (80 millions of acres, cultivated and waste) pays in all only 230 lacs (£2,300,000); so that the irrigated land, though comprising only about one-fortieth of the whole area of the country, yet pays rather more

than a third of the land revenues; and if the present irrigating works were only put in proper repair, the irrigated land would undoubtedly yield an additional revenue, equal probably to half that at present derived from unirrigated land. Whilst dry land is assessed at 1 rupee (2s.) per acre, irrigated land pays 10 or 20 (£1 to £2), so that the cultivator has no option but to grow the crop that will make the best use of the greatest quantity of water, and yield the greatest amount of produce in a certain space. In most parts of the country there is plenty of land waiting to be cultivated, which the Government can supply to the cultivator without outlay; but all the water Government has to dispose of has cost money. The water, therefore, should be sold, and little more than a nominal rent charged on the land, which, indeed, when the water applied to it is paid for, might be entirely free; and the cultivators would then, of course, apply the water in the way most profitable to themselves, and, consequently, to the community. Lands in Tanjore, which have been irrigated, have borne two white grain crops annually for centuries, without any other manure. Supposing that 1,000,000 cubic yards of water per hour are distributed by means of the Godavery works, then, probably, 1,000 tons of solid manure are every hour deposited on the land, without the cost of either carriage or of spreading; and we leave the farmer to calculate the value of this. Now the Godavery actually conveys to the sea about 150,000,000 cubic yards of water per hour, in a high fresh, containing probably 150,000 tons of solid manure; and if we value it at only one-tenth of

that of guano, we find that manure to the value of £150,000 per hour, or £3½ millions sterling per day, is constantly being carried to the sea. Land is even made by this process; that is, worthless land thus irrigated from rivers, is in a few years converted permanently into land of the highest fertility."

In speaking of the deterioration of cotton for want of a sufficiency of water, Colonel Cotton remarks: "I need not here go into further detail about this; but, if the papers of the American cotton-planters employed in India be examined, it will be seen how strongly they insist upon the deterioration of the quality of cotton, as well as deficiency in quantity, caused by drought. There are two methods of obtaining a command of water for irrigation, &c.,—first, by diverting it from rivers, by means of weirs and channels; secondly, by damming up small streams with earthen bunds, and thus forming tanks in which it is stored up during local rains. When we consider the magnitude of the field, and the trifling sum yet spent as compared with the outlay required, we are surely warranted in asserting that public works have been almost entirely neglected throughout India. The work that ought to have been spread over the last hundred years, must, therefore, if we wish to redeem our character, be done in the next ten; and, to accomplish this, will call for the utmost energies of men in full possession of all their faculties. Hitherto, the only mistake of any consequence that has not been guarded against, is that of doing nothing. The Board of Public Works ought to have written on the paper-stand in front of each

member and secretary, in large letters, 'Do it, do it, do it!' The motto hitherto has been 'Do nothing; have nothing done; let nobody do anything. Bear any loss, let the people die of famine, let hundreds of lacs be lost in revenue, for want of water or roads, rather than *do* anything.' Who would believe that without half a dozen miles of real turnpike-road, with communications generally in much the same state as in England two centuries ago, with periodical famines and a stagnant revenue, the stereotyped answer to any one who urges on improvement is, 'He is too much in a hurry;' 'He is too sanguine;' 'We must go on by degrees'?—and this too in the face of the fact, that money laid out in public works in India, has almost without exception yielded money returns of 100, 200, 300 per cent., besides immeasurable other advantages to the community."

To those who wish to see the affairs of Government conducted without having recourse to a gagging system or one of secrecy, we would recommend Colonel Cotton's remarks on Mr. Campbell's late work on India:—

"A new work entitled 'India as it May Be' has recently been published by Mr. Campbell, in which he attempts the harder task of setting things to rights. Nothing is clearer to me than that no Indian civilian can possibly do this. The man who could write Mr. Campbell's first book, has proved that no one of his class can accomplish the object of the second. His whole head must be emptied of its present views and notions, before it can possibly find room for such as are required to enable a man to make India 'what it

may be.' Witness one single specimen of Mr. Campbell's ideas, in the opinion that gagging and secrecy are essential to good and effective government. We are to believe that he would prefer being compelled by his superiors to pass among his fellow-countrymen and native fellow-men as a man of infamy, rather than run the risk of a system of publicity. And, of course, the man who could thus allow himself to be degraded by his superiors, would act upon the same principles to his subordinates, and prohibit them the right of justifying themselves in the sight of their fellow-men. Is it not astonishing that in our day men can be found—Englishmen—who dare publicly to declare, that such is their fear of publicity, that they will rather submit to the degrading position than have their conduct openly discussed? Rather allow any stains upon their character, than be liable to such a publication of their official acts as will enable their fellow-rulers and fellow-subjects to judge of their conduct generally? Need we enquire one step further to satisfy ourselves of the utter unsoundness of a system which leads men to prefer anything to the light? 'He that doeth truth cometh to the light that his deeds may be made manifest.' Is it not enough to make a man ashamed of his country and service to see such principles openly acknowledged? Any man may make great mistakes for want of judgment, &c., but, if he be honest, he will never be afraid of publicity. The system of gagging their servants at once stamps a government as unsound and dishonest; and those who are slaves as subordinates are surely training for tyrants when they get into power.



This secrecy is one of the blights under which India has withered hitherto; and so deeply rooted is this principle, that it can never be eradicated but by a power from without. What thousands of abominations are daily perpetrated that could not stand one moment's exposure if liable to it immediately after the act! A man stands up and confesses himself the author of such an atrocity as the Afghan war after an interval of some years; but he dare not have looked his country in the face if his agency in the matter had been discovered soon after the war had been entered upon. The grand check upon evil must be the liability to seeing it all in print the next morning; and the knowledge that all the facts will be made known to everybody before the interest of the matter is lost. How wonderful it seems, then, that any body of men can be so misguided as openly to declare that they dare not have their official acts known and canvassed; thus admitting that they are bent on doing things which will not bear the light."

The degeneracy of the British officials in India has frequently been mooted as one of the principal causes of the rebellion in that country; the Sepoys, seeing that their white friends had imbibed many of the very worst portions of the native habits, having naturally concluded that with their English morality they had likewise parted with their English spirit, and, consequently, that no serious obstacle to an effectual rising in arms on their part was to be apprehended from their rulers. I had often heard the subject canvassed, but could not bring myself to believe it at all possible that my countrymen could so completely

have laid aside the garb of English morality—and assumed that of heathen India—until my eye lighted upon Colonel Cotton's "Picture of an Official in India." For what says that gallant officer:—

"Of all the sad and depressing things continually before our eyes in India, one of the worst is, to see the Anglo-Saxon who has been born and bred in an atmosphere of freedom and knowledge, in which his mental vision has expanded and strengthened beyond anything before seen in the world, allowing his mind gradually to shrink and contract, until he at last comes to think the poor, wretched ideas of the bookless Asiatics the height of wisdom. Thus daily to witness the mental deterioration of fine, intelligent young men, is indeed melancholy, and yet there is nothing surprising in it. The young lad on entering the civil service in India, is sent to some remote place where he sits from morning to night, surrounded by his slavish native cutcherry servants, and continues immersed in this poisonous atmosphere day after day, and year after year, with but very little intercourse either with Europeans or with books. Under such circumstances, how should anything better be expected, than that, without being the least sensible of it himself, his mind shall become more and more dwarfed, till he really sees things with native eyes? Of course a few active-minded, energetic men keep themselves to a considerable extent above this influence; but I can safely affirm, that until of late years, there was hardly an individual in the civil service who had not been more or less grievously injured in this way, and I confidently appeal to the state of India at

this moment in proof of the assertion. Is it at this moment in an Asiatic or a European condition? How is the time of collectors occupied? What portion of it in matters immediately connected with the collection of the revenue, and how much on matters calculated to raise, either physically or mentally, the state of the people?"

Low, indeed, must the morality of that government be, which would much rather have its actions *misrepresented* than most truly represented. How far the Indian Government comes under this category we shall leave the reader to judge from the following remarks from the pen of Colonel Cotton, whose Indian experiences give to them much additional weight:—

"It is not, in fact, misrepresentations that are dreaded; it is representations. Persons who dread publicity do not want to know the real state of things in the country; nor do they want the people to know the state of things in their offices. Whoever heard of a collector eagerly taking advantage of the residence of the European merchants, manufacturers, missionaries, &c., residing in his district, and in daily contact with the natives about the ordinary affairs of life, to obtain information from them as to the real state of the natives, the real effect of his proceedings upon them, and the conduct of the subordinate officials? In thirty years I have never known an instance of it; whereas I have known a man give to a collector most valuable and important information, which had not the slightest chance of it ever reaching him otherwise, surrounded as he is by a phalanx of Brahmins; and the only acknowledgment the informant received was a most imperti-

nent and overbearing reply. On one occasion the Government was informed that some lacs of rupees were deficient in the cash-chest of the collector. What can a Government do with vile misrepresentations? And after the district had been some years longer under the man who could not, of course, check corruption of which he himself set the example, a deficiency of eight lacs was discovered. If a man will praise everything, declare that nothing can be improved, that the natives are rolling in wealth, that every district is a garden, that trade is everywhere in a most vigorous state, that all the old public works are in perfect order, that no roads, bridges, tanks, channels, ports, &c. are required,—every word he says is true, and he is a most worthy man. But if he tells the real state of things, he is a vile misrepresenter; and if he points out how the state of things may be improved—how the treasury and the people may be checked, he is a troubler that must be put down.”

Let us now turn our attention for a few moments to the gallant Colonel's interesting information respecting the “Paumba Works,” showing, as he does, what India is capable of producing, even under a system of management far from perfect:—

“When I was sent there in 1822, the whole amount of traffic was 17,000 tons in a year, though the whole of the cotton from Tinnevely was then received through the channel to Madras; whereas now the traffic is sometimes more than that in one month (though the cotton is almost all shipped at once from Tutecorin), and the annual traffic is 168,000, or tenfold the former quantity. Such has been the effect of deepening

that passage from  $4\frac{1}{2}$  to  $10\frac{1}{2}$  feet. Such an instance is an unanswerable proof of the fact that traffic is waiting for communications, and not that communications have to wait for the traffic, as some still suppose. How strangely the state of the question of communication in India is misapprehended has been singularly shown in this case, as before stated, by the perfect indifference with which the opening of the Godavery was treated by the Government of India. Let the reader refer to Mr. Bonynges's "Future Wealth of America," the production of a practical planter, and though we may not admire the blustering style in which it is written, we cannot but admit its force, and we have the means in some instances of testing the accuracy of the statistics. Its general object is to show that cotton cultivation in America, though it has contributed so powerfully in times past to its wealth, is now irrecoverably on the decline, and must be abandoned for the cultivation of tea, coffee, indigo, and other plants. From the statistics furnished, it appears that cotton has for twelve years declined in price 30 per cent. yearly; rice during nine years, in quantity and quality, 15 per cent.; that breadstuffs are returning to the same amount of exports that they were prior to the failure of the potato crop in Europe; and that sugar cultivation is not advancing. With the present price of labour in America, there is no possibility of extending the cultivation of these articles; and, except tobacco, it is feared that they will all greatly decline. Cotton cannot be cultivated in America under  $5\frac{1}{2}$  cents per lb.; whereas India can produce it and land it at Liverpool, at 7 cents per lb.

“After a fourteen years’ residence (as a planter) in the East, and after a tour through South Carolina and Georgia, Mr. Bonyng is constrained to admit that India has every means of producing as good cotton, and much cheaper, than America; and he further asserts, that had it not been for the potato failure, and the timely aid of California, America could never have borne the decay of her principal staple for the last ten years.”

I have had a difficulty in selecting these passages from Colonel Cotton’s work, or rather grouping them so as to dovetail—a thing impossible from the fact of their having been promiscuously quoted from every part of the work. If, however, these quotations, clumsily as they are interwoven with the subject, should be the means of inducing even a few to consult the work, I shall feel that my labour has not been altogether unremunerated. Colonel Cotton is no inexperienced theorist upon the subject he has undertaken to write about, but a practical man who has spent many years in India, and confesses in one part of his work that the subject of it had occupied his attention, more or less, for a term of not less than thirty years.

We now take leave of Colonel Cotton’s excellent work, in the ardent hope that many may make themselves acquainted with its contents; for as regards the improvement of India by means of canals, bridges, roads, railways, and irrigation, no work yields more important information.

## CHAPTER XIX.

## JUDICIAL REFORMS OF INDIA.

To the maladministration of the law in India many, both in that country and at home, attribute not a little of the late disaffection at Bengal, &c.; but though not idle during my stay in Calcutta, I was not fortunate enough, I must confess, to obtain such information as would warrant me to offer anything like a correct opinion on the subject. In one thing all, however, seem to be agreed, and that is, that not even a doubt should for a moment be allowed to rest in the hearts of the natives that justice has been withheld from them; for nothing so soon sours the temper of men, or rouses them to the commission of acts of violence or revenge, than the idea that justice has been denied them by those appointed to dispense it. And that a rather grim and equivocal description of justice is at times meted out to the people of India, the printed exposures of the judicial system in that country contained in a work lately published by Mr. Theodore Henry Dickens, of Lincoln's Inn, Barrister-at-Law, entitled, "A Letter to the Right Hon. Robert Vernon Smith, M.P., President of the Board of Control," bear ample testimony. "Sheridan," says Mr. Dickens, "seventy years

ago painted Justice as one whose countenance was ever placid and benign ; whose favourite attribute is to stoop to the unfortunate, to hear their cry and help them, to rescue and relieve, to succour and to save ; majestic for its mercy—venerable for its utility—uplifted, without pride—firm, without obduracy—beneficent in each preference—lovely though in her power.’ But the thing which went by her name in India that celebrated orator denounced as a disgusting caricature, a halt and miserable object, the ineffective bauble of an Indian pagod. The portentous phantom of despair—like any fabled monster formed in the eclipse of reason, and found in some unhallowed grove of superstitious darkness and political dismay.” And that justice is still administered in India in the same manner as it was in the days that Sheridan pronounced Indian justice a “portentous phantom,” we have only to run our eye over the following extract from the letter of Mr. Dickens :—

“The embryo magistrate installs himself in a dwelling-house, the property of the principal landholder in the vicinity ; a nominal rent is, for appearance’ sake, negotiated, while double the amount is usually spent in repairs and improvements. The landlord impresses upon his tenantry the obligations the authorities are under to him, and he is enabled to give them an extra squeeze. A room in the building is set aside as a court ; all the procedure is in writing ; a nephew of the magistrate’s confidential native functionary presides as confidant and mentor to the youthful Englishman ; several other writers, a few attendants, porters, and policemen arranged in blue



turbans and badges, describe this official retinue ; and with all the lighter charges and petitions of the magistrate's file handed to him for adjudication, the young man commences his career, taking lessons on the wrongs of indigent men much in the same way as Magendie experimented upon living animals. The language of the court is not the dialect of the people ; the evidence, therefore, of the witnesses, the accuser and the accused, must be taken in writing by a native examiner, and the whole proofs of the most trivial assault, or the foulest murder, are carefully arranged by a man who receivestenshillings a month : a *douceur* modifies the evidence materially."

Thank God that such things have for many years been unknown in our courts of justice. That such a system is still in force in India speaks volumes in disparagement of those entrusted with British rule in that quarter. Let us hope that something has been done since Mr. Dickens returned from the East, towards purifying the courts of India of such a pollution, striking as it does at the very root of justice. But equally startling are the facts communicated in this extract:—

"When all is ready the papers are read aloud by the head native functionary, while the young man is drawing a horse or a ship on some blotting-paper, or hacking the table with his penknife. At the conclusion the bench intimates to his sable mentor to give a suitable order. But the decisions here pronounced do not rest upon the affidavits of witnesses present so much as upon the report and details of an investigating official, who possesses the most anomalous power in the inte-

rior of the province. At the distance of some twenty or thirty miles from each other, small police stations are distributed; these are occupied by a few paid and unpaid policemen, the latter being rewarded for their zeal by a levy upon the inhabitants, in which the former share. This *posse* is commanded by a sergeant, called a *darogah*; a corporal, called a *jamadar*, and a clerk; for it very often happens that, although engaged in the most extensive paper correspondence, the two former cannot write. Under these officers again are placed a body of village watchmen, said to amount in Bengal, in round numbers, to no less than 200,000 men, and supported by a local tax upon all huts. These guardians of the night are thieves by profession, and thieves by hereditary descent. The duty of the sergeant is to enquire into all unlawful causes of offence, take down evidence, and report his own convictions on the case to his superior, the magistrate, who in most cases decides accordingly, as he cannot help relying on the accuracy of a man writing from the spot. And thus the lives and fortunes of the people depend upon the goodwill of a set of the most unmitigated scoundrels on earth. Under this advantageous training the young civilian speedily becomes a magistrate, and a good deal more than a magistrate, as we understand it in England. He is not simply a judicial officer, but a thief-catcher, police superintendent, accuser, and magistrate in one. A conviction by him, in his judicial capacity, is a compliment to himself as thief-catcher and policeman. Is it strange that he should have, therefore, a strong leaning to severity? In fact, as there is no sort of division

of labour in the service, the education above described is supposed to fit a civilian to be thief-catcher, police superintendent, accuser, magistrate, judge, an intricate tax-collector, a commissioner of revenue (with nearly indescribable powers), a post-master, an opium agent, a salt salesman, an exciseman, a secretary to Government, a diplomatist, a finance minister, a professor of English law, a director of public instruction, and an *ædile* or commissioner of sewers and public works—all in turn. But if he is remarkably idle or remarkably foolish, his elevation to the bench becomes a certainty, as he is considered unfit to be employed in what are deemed the more important branches of the public service. You will think I exaggerate, but I am stating a truth as notorious in India as that the earth goes round the sun. I know an instance in which an exhibition of re-remarkable folly on the part of his senior gained a friend and connection of my own an unexpected promotion. That senior for his folly was immediately made a judge, because he could not, in the opinion of the authorities, be entrusted with revenue matters, and my friend got the post his senior would have had if no doubt had been entertained of his *sanity*."

Now such things being tolerated in India, can we be surprised at the late alienation of so many of the natives from our rule. On perusing the first few sentences of the foregoing extract, I was about to exclaim,—It is an exaggeration; when my eye lighting upon the sentence, "You will think I exaggerate, but I am stating a truth as notorious in India as that the earth goes round the sun," told me that I was about to commit an injustice;

the author here pledging his character to the truth of his affirmation. Though at present a conscientious representation of abuses and schemes for their reform frequently bring the officials into disgrace, it is quite evident that, if not already introduced, the reformer's pruning knife must ere long be thoroughly applied to the whole of our civil system of government in India. For of what more glaring act of misgovernment—to use a mild term—could any set of men be guilty than that related in the following sentence:—

“Every man, as he attains sufficient standing, can be made a judge; in fact he is not made a judge if he has shown too much ability to be spared from the other branches of the service, or if he pushes his interest with a view to other employment. It cannot be denied that the judicial training of the civilian is totally deficient in every requisite for the improvement of his natural capacity. Let any kind of fault be proved against him, no notice is taken of it; or, if any is taken, it is generally in the nature of a kick up-stairs. Mr. Wilson cites an instance: ‘A judge, condemned by the Court of Directors for open fraud in the performance of his judicial duty, is deprived of an appointment yielding £2,300, and is installed in another worth £6,000 per annum;’ and adds, ‘This one instance is given where twenty more might be added.’”

For the honour of the British name let us hope that but few similar appointments are recorded in the annals of our Indian empire; for, look at the transaction in whatever light we may, it invariably presents itself in the shape of an attempt on the part of the Indian officials to line the pockets of

a worthless servant at the expense of their employers. But this is not all. The author continues to enlighten us on this subject thus :—

“This is true when the delinquency is not of a nature to offend the Government; but if the judge decides against the Government, he is sure to feel its displeasure sooner or later. He has entered into a covenant with them, the precise nature of which we are not aware; but that, and the fact of his promotion depending, not on his own merits, but on the goodwill of the executive government, render him totally subservient. The Government does not hesitate to tell the judges how they are to decide in cases of which the decision affects its own interests, as I shall presently show. This evil spreads through all the subordinate judicial officers. The latter obey the slightest hint of the magistrate, whom they regard as the exponent of the wishes of those in power. Let him be known to have a prejudice against a given zemindar, or planter, and the obnoxious individual is ruined. The slightest expression of his bias—an indirect hint even—and the man indicated never gains his case. Assistant magistrates, deputy magistrates, cazees, pundits, umlah, suddar ameers, moonsiffs, darogahs, police,—all are banded against him. Not only does he suffer defeat in every case which he himself brings into court, but endless accusations are trumped up against him, and supported by perjury and forgery. If, in order to establish a case against even a notorious London burglar, the Ministers of Queen Victoria were to call perjury and forgery to their aid, would not their ears be tickled with deafening execrations from every

corner of the United Kingdom? Why, then, do not our home rulers at once tell their Indian subordinates that they will not be permitted to employ means which are alike hateful in the sight of both God and man, to accomplish any object whatever. After this exposure we should remain silent on the subject of Sepoy morality."

In the same criminating strain Mr. Dickens proceeds thus:—

"A conscientious representation of abuses, and schemes for their reform, as frequently bring the official into disgrace; he is ordered not to be troublesome and meddling, but to do as others do. If the civilians (one of the *employés* as judge or magistrate) are convicted of the gravest faults, they are generally promoted and rewarded by the Government, as if to defy public opinion in India, and to show that proof of a civilian's malpractices is all that is required to assure him of the favour of Government. For example, the judge mentioned in my letter to Bright was convicted of the most disgraceful frauds; it was impossible that he should remain a judge; they gave him a better berth, with an increased income, and increased opportunities of fraud, though they reprimanded him, and he is now (1835) employed in the opium department. Another, named —, imprisoned two English proprietors, and exposed them to all sorts of indignities. He was completely mad; that was proved. The Government released his victims, of course, without any indemnification of loss, or making them any amends, and gave — leave of absence for two years. On his return, as mad as ever, he was again made magistrate, and again commenced persecuting an

Y

Englishman in the same fashion. The Government again released his victim, and sent him to a district where there were no English, knowing that he might do what he liked among the natives, without exciting much public uproar. This was, I believe, the same judge who, as lately stated by the Englishman, tried, convicted, and hung a man within two hours!—a not unnatural consequence of keeping maniacal pets in power. But perhaps, as the last-mentioned victim was ‘only a nigger,’ and there are a hundred millions of them, one more or less does not much matter.”

Were such offences as are here laid to the charge of the Indian authorities to be proved against the members of the Home Government, would not the culprits very soon be compelled to hide their guilty heads in retirement, covered with shame and disgrace? Why, then, were not the guilty parties in India made to answer for their maladministration of the Government entrusted to them by their too confiding Sovereign? Were the members of the Government so implicated, and the cases of the kind so numerous, that, had prosecutions been instituted against all engaged in the practices, a system so tinged with corruption would have been laid bare, the very exposure of which would have shaken the whole Indian fabric to its centre? Waiting for a reply, we request the reader's attention to the following:—

“I have known a judge refuse to join me in issuing an order which he thought right, because it would draw down upon him a reprimand from the Government. There are, besides, other ways

of influencing a court: thus I have been aware of a Governor communicating privately with the judges of the highest court in the country, and giving them his views and arguments in a case of importance, in which he was anxious to secure a decision for Government, and he got the decision. I have known an instance of a Governor-General calling for an explanation of one of the same court's decisions. I have known a magistrate hold secret authority from Government to disobey the order of this court on a particular point. In the third place, the courts are inefficient. I was myself appointed to the chief court, though I had been a revenue officer all my life, because it had got into such confusion, that it was thought necessary to appoint some one unconnected with the squabbles existing in it, to make the machine work at all. I have seen many men sitting in that court as incompetent as myself. I have known a highly respectable English merchant told in open court, by a magistrate, that the Government had their eye upon him, and that he was a marked man, because he had taken a part in a case which the magistrate did not like. Everywhere out of Calcutta the position of the European settler is this: either he possesses the favour of the authorities, in which case he has unfair advantages; or he is under their displeasure, in which case he is at an unfair disadvantage. But neither position suits an independent, prudent man. Some years further back—I think about 1835 or 1836—a magistrate, with a view to put a stop to burglaries and thefts, ordered that in every village a party of inhabitants should perambulate the village and its purlieus all night. He had no more authority



to do this than to order the Governor-General to keep watch and ward. He reported to Government at the end of the year what he had done, and actually, instead of a reprimand and removal from his situation, he was highly commended, and all other magistrates were urged to follow his example. And they did so, almost without an exception, so that the whole country was nocturnally worried and disturbed in this way for a year or two, till the madness of the project became too evident, and the whole died away.

“I have, with one exception, confined myself to proof of the incompetence of the English officials—gentlemen of the middle classes of our own country; I leave you to guess how much worse the lower native classes of deputy magistrates, &c., are as a body. Yet many of these exercise the enormous powers of the Indian magistrate; and it is to such men that European settlers are to be subjected in matters affecting life and liberty. That immigration to India has not been stopped before, from the partial subjection already existing to these courts, is matter of great wonderment; that they have operated as a grievous check upon commerce and enterprise, and have given rise to fraud and violence, there cannot be a shadow of a doubt; but that in spite of all these evil inducements, there are to be found many admirable civilians, men who strive earnestly to do their best, manfully contending against a system which cramps their energies, nullifies their efforts, and holds out no reward for their exertions,—that there are still to be found planters, who, despite all the temptation to crime, would rather suffer ruin, and lose the reward of their long-toil, than

resort to illegal violence, or uphold their legal rights by chicane and fraud, is proof of nothing but the high morality and dauntless courage of our race. It shows only that Englishmen have not yet degenerated from the lofty spirit of their fathers,—that their energy will triumph over obstacles in the fields of peaceful enterprise with the same stubborn resolution and unfailing heart which they have so often proved in the ranks of war,—that the countrywomen of Lucy Hutchinson are still upon occasion the mothers of men who may challenge comparison with him whom she so truly loved, and of whom she has left us a memorial so noble. The judges of the Supreme Court, during the time that I held office in it, were three as learned lawyers and upright gentlemen as ever sat upon a colonial bench; and I shall ever speak of them not only with the respect due to their high position, and with professional reverence for their learning, but with personal gratitude for the kindness invariably shown to me during the years that I had the honour to be their servant. I do not hesitate to say that, all things considered, they were fully the equals in learning of their brethren in England. But I am perfectly certain that they have no conception of the state of the country without their jurisdiction. Their high station prevents them mingling to any degree with non-official classes; and even if they could do so, those classes would not speak without reserve before such high officials. The very conscientious diligence with which they discharge their very laborious duties prevents their acquirement of any personal knowledge of the country. Their knowledge of it is drawn almost solely from

their conversation with high officials of the civil service. The real rulers of India, as far as concerns internal administration, at least, are the Government Secretaries. The Governor General, when first appointed, must rely upon them, from his ignorance of the country; the reliance upon and reference to them generally become habitual; and just as the Governor General acquires sufficient knowledge to act independently of them, his term of office expires; and during its continuance his attention is generally directed solely to what are called, by a singular perversion of terms, 'Imperial matters.' Lord Dalhousie, I am sure, had never enquired much into the matter of law or police; his attention was so much occupied with making war, and putting kingdoms into his pocket—operations that did not bring him within the power of those charming establishments—that he forgot others were subject to them. I am confident that if he had known their state and effect, he would have found a remedy for the misery they produce. But as to the internal state of the country, the Governor General is always kept as much as possible in the dark. We have Lord Ellenborough's own statement that he knew nothing of the existence of torture; and yet almost every other man in India was as conscious of the fact as of his own existence. The last Governor General who devoted his time to the examination of the judicial evils was the great and good Lord William Bentinck—the man to whom is due the fact that there is now a single Englishman to be found in India. It is high time we had another Governor General of his temper and calibre. Most of his important measures were

carried in the teeth of the Court of Directors; he thwarted them whenever opposition would tend to the benefit of India, or the interests of the Crown; and they took very good care not to give him a pension. His opinion of the police and courts was such that he deliberately abandoned one of the legitimate functions of Government—inquiry into thefts and burglaries. He had heard, and was convinced, that the people of Bengal suffered more from the police officers than from thefts and burglaries, and he put a stop to one of the fruitful sources of legalized oppression by enacting VI. of 1832. The object of the East India Company has always been to keep lawyers out of the country, because their learning and fitness for their duties afford a too painful contrast to the ignorance of the civilians; and because, in Calcutta at least, the bar has always exposed, and stopped by public agitation, the grosser absurdities of their legislation. They have shown the greatest hostility to the profession ever since they were defeated in their attempt to keep the bar also a closed nest for their own patronage. Their cry against lawyers has been always the same as that of Dick the butcher in his little request to Jack Cade — ‘The first thing we do, let’s kill all the lawyers.’ ‘Any law you please,’ say the civilians, ‘Mahometan or Macauleian; but, for God’s sake, no lawyers.’ I am half afraid, sir, that my statements will not be believed, and yet I have carefully restricted myself to a very mild revelation of the judicial evils of India. I have always said that if those evils had been a tithe of what they are, a remedy would have been found for them long ago. But they are so

atrocious, so incredible, that their description generally gains for the author the character of a Munchausen. It has often amused me to see the terror my many informants have one and all expressed when I begged to be allowed to publish their facts with their names. They knew that they would be objects of persecution by the great majority of officials in their district; in short, would be ruined. However, I can only repeat, that I have but lifted a corner of the curtain; and you will find that assertion correct if you will only enquire into the matter. No doubt it will be denied; but really there are two members of the House of Commons, who are called the members for Honiton and Guildford, but who ought to be called the members for the bewilderment of the House upon Indian topics. Whenever an enthusiastic member, who has never been in India, and has not the archives of the India House at hand, gets hold of a little bit of Indian grievance, then I know I shall soon see the comely presence of the member for Honiton rise in his place, and with fluent elocution, exquisite tact, great sophistical skill, some perversion, and no small suppression, of the truth, puzzle the honourable House. He will also lay a trap for Mr. Murrough, who will fall plump into it. Then the not-so-comely presence of the member for Guildford will rise in his place and talk against time, with less tact and less skill, and will drive the honourable House frantic with boredom; and I shall read in the *Times* next morning that 'the subject then dropped.' But it is high time that some one was listened to on the other side. Perhaps as I

have presumed to address you I ought to say a few words about myself. I am no place-hunter reviling official abuses from motives of disappointment; the office which I had the honour to hold was offered to me without any solicitation on my part, and resigned at my own wish. It is just as likely that any office in India which I would accept will be offered to me again as that I should be asked to take a seat in the Cabinet. Had I ever hoped or wished for such an office, the chance of obtaining it would be destroyed by this publication. Lastly, I have no cause of dislike against the East India Company's service: a very large number of my connections are in it. I might have been in it myself; and I have found among its members some of my most valued friends. I have, therefore, a right to demand that my evidence should be received as that of a man whose personal interests not only do not prompt its delivery but urge powerfully to its concealment."

In the preceding extracts Mr. Dickens does not mince matters. The picture of the Indian courts of law, as drawn by him, and its truthfulness attested by later writers well acquainted with the subject, has not increased our anxiety to see the Eastern system introduced here. Justice can proceed from a pure source only; therefore it follows that when the fountain of justice is polluted the thing styled justice, proceeding from the polluted source, is not justice, but a vile fraud; a fact which it is hoped those at the helm, be they Whig, Tory, or Radical, will never again lose sight of.

## COTTON.

The cotton manufactures of this country have now assumed such extraordinary dimensions that every information respecting the growth of that article in any one of the British possessions is a matter of national importance, seeing that America, to which we are indebted for our principal supplies, may, on some very frivolous pretence, shut the door against us. I was glad to hear at Calcutta that our Indian possessions yielded at present large quantities of cotton, but that, owing to the absence of good internal water and railway communication, the poor cultivators, not being able to send the fruits of their labour to a foreign market, are compelled to dispose of it in their own vicinity for a mere trifle. On this interesting and all-engrossing subject, a late author, who knows India well, writes:—

“The quantity raised in India is enormous, yet the cultivators from adhering to their ancient systems of tillage, have never produced any cotton equal to that reared in the United States. Independently of their bad systems of culture, the natives, like other people, throw the blame on several deteriorating causes, principally on the four following:—

“1. The oppressive fiscal regulations.

“2. The want of proper roads and means of removing the cotton.

“3. The baneful effects of the different middle men, who screw the ryots to the utmost; and

“4. To the exorbitant demands of the village usurers, to whom the wretched cultivators are

frequently forced to apply for means to purchase seed.

“In such circumstances it cannot be expected that the soil should be prepared in the best manner ; and a bad half or third crop of the worst material is the result. When the time for gathering in the crop has come, the oppressed ryot is unable to do it properly ; he is forced to wait for assistance, or to lodge the carelessly gathered cotton in a large open hole, where it is exposed to the vicissitudes of the season, and its value considerably deteriorated. From not having means to take it to a good market he has to sell it for a trifle. Thus passes the life of the ryot ; and thus oppression begets negligence, negligence begets apathy, and apathy begets misery, in regular succession, throughout India. If India be treated with fairness and justice,—if due encouragement be given to industrious cultivators, that vast and most magnificent continent, which is now like plastic clay in the hands of the British Legislature, of the Board of Control, and of the Directors of the East India Company, will produce cotton of every kind that the most fastidious spinner in Lancashire can, by any possibility, wish for. But we must not trust for these good results to the system that is now at work there, which is one that is calculated to do evil more than good. It may be useful to mention here, that the first names by which cotton cloth was known in Europe came from India. Thus the name of ‘calico’ was adopted by the Portuguese from Calicut, where they found that cloth ; ‘muslin’ is derived from Moussul, where it was first manufactured, &c.”



## LITERATURE IN INDIA.

Literature appears to be at a very low ebb in India, though that portion of the globe could boast of its civilization in the days of Alexander the Great. For this lamentable state of things various are the reasons assigned ; the principal one being the total absence of encouragement on the part of those entrusted with the management of Indian affairs. From the length of time which we have held sway over the Indian masses, a vast deal more might have been done by the Board of Directors and Board of Control than has yet been accomplished. What was Scotland little more than a hundred years ago ; and what has been the state of Scottish literature during the last half century ? If such great things could be brought about in a hundred years in one country, surely civilization and education should have been infinitely further advanced in India at this day than it really is, and that it is not is a severe reflection upon the powers that be ; for, until India can boast of a literature of its own, and the masses raised a step or two in the scale of civilization and education, the population of Hindostan will remain the same savage race that their late acts have shown them at present to be. The following stricture, though severe, is, I fear, but too true :—

“The long-subsisting link of literature, which learned men of future ages may think ought to have joined England and India, has hitherto been neglected on the side of the former. It is undeniable that India was civilized even at the period

of Alexander's invasion, and numerous vestiges remain of its learning; but the British conquerors affected to despise such antiquities. The Board of Control is accused of keeping the purse-strings so closed as to prevent the Directors from contributing to make the lore of India known in Great Britain. It will scarcely be credited in this enlightened country, at this advanced era, when there is such a halo of exhibitionary glory around the brows of England, that complete translations of the grand Indian works, such as the Rama-yana, the Maha-Bharat, the Vedas, and Puranas, and of various celebrated poems, have not been published in English. The Germans, the Italians, the French, even the Russians and the modern Greeks, have some of those works laid before them in good translations. But the rich, powerful East India Proprietors, although annually receiving millions of pounds sterling from that country, have not thought it worth while to dedicate their attention to this subject. The Czar Nicholas gives £10,000 per annum for translations; the East India Company dedicates nothing specific to that purpose. Professor Wilson, to whom England and India are equally indebted, has, at his own cost, published a translation of the Vishnu Purana and other works. The modern Greeks at Athens possess at present the advantage of estimating in their own language a translation of a great deal of the beautiful Indian poetry of the olden times, which Great Britain, with all her scientific characters, her learned authors, her colleges, her universities, her East India Company, and her vast resources, has not yet been able to obtain. However, it is not just

to throw the blame on the Company or the Proprietary. The fault lies at the door of other parties ; that is, of the administrations, which have, by means of the Board of Control, rendered India a hot-house, in which some weeds, and a few flowers of literature, are forced into premature existence, while the old magnificent lands of the early Indian forest-mind are neglected ; they, nevertheless, still live, and require merely to be awakened into full life and activity to produce a powerful effect, not only in India, but in England. It is a mistake to think of changing the currents of the Hindoo mind without seeing clearly whence those currents take their rise, and which is the course they follow. They will never be known unless by having the literature thoroughly translated."

#### BOARD OF CONTROL.

Seventy years are said, by the royal prophet, to constitute the usual period of human life ; and that period appears fixed for the East India Company, since from 1784 to 1854 will form the allotted space. In 1784 the Board of Control was established, and it has gradually advanced to caducity at the expense of the Company ; for at the grant of each Charter since that time, the Company has been required to transfer some special advantages to the British Government. It was the application to the Company itself of the system which the Company's agents in India had invariably urged on the native princes, namely, "Accept this treaty (Charter) and give me some advantage." A treaty once accepted, caught the fly in the spider's web ; the more he

struggled the more he was entangled in the meshes, until at length he, from sheer exhaustion, ceased to move. The Company in its turn has become the fly, and now that body, which was some years ago regarded as the merchant princes of Leadenhall Street, is almost defunct before the insatiate spider in the Board of Control, whose oath is worthy of notice.

The oath which every President of the Board of Control has taken on entering upon office since it was first established in 1784, is as follows:—

“I, A. B., do faithfully promise and swear, that as a Commissioner and Member of the Board for the affairs of India, I will give my best advice and assistance for the good government of the British possessions in the East Indies, and the due administration of the revenues of the same, according to law; and will execute the several powers and trusts reposed in me according to the best of my skill and judgment without favour or affection, prejudice or malice, to any person whatever.”

Common charity calls upon us to believe, that on taking the preceding oath, all the Honourable and Right Honourable personages who have held that office fully intended to act up to the solemn vow they had taken; but good intentions and good actions are two widely different things. Some of them appear to have had the amelioration of the condition of the people of India much more at heart than others; but after impartially summing up all the good which the whole body have accomplished for India, it will appear trifling to what the promoters of the Board expected in 1784. Much opposition was given

to the progress of the lately passed India Bill, which abolishes the Board of Control; but that the Board has not been sent on its travels one moment too soon is evident from what a late author states in the following extract:—

“The Board of Control does its business lazily, for there is no man to spur it forward; it was at first adopted to control the vagaries of the Directors, but it is now the drag upon the wheels of the Governmental coach, and stops all progress. A board of ‘energy and talent to produce good for India,’ is the present desideratum. There is no efficient public voice to control the acts of any authority in India, and the superintendence of the civil and military *employé* is by far too lax, for it tolerates vices of the grossest character, and hence the advancement of the country in wealth, civilization, and happiness, is of the slowest kind, if it be not altogether torpid. Occasionally commotions arise, which almost shake the social edifice to pieces, and Great Britain, having the care of it, is then frightened by the approach of danger into acts of prudence and justice. It is only at those periods of alarm, to which the Eastern empire is frequently exposed, that any wish to introduce measures likely to be beneficial to India is exhibited.”

#### CHRISTIANITY IN INDIA.

It is a duty now to allude, however shortly, to the various efforts made to introduce the pure doctrines of the Christian religion among the millions who inhabit the far-famed country of the East. The efforts made for that purpose have been of the most extraordinary kind. Traces

have been found of the first preaching of the Gospel, and there are a few still known as the Christians of St. Thomas, who are said to have derived the first principles of religion from the preaching of that Apostle. The Portuguese, on arriving in India, were animated by the desire of extending their religious tenets. Being enthusiastic assailants of the Moslem creed, they converted many Indians. They also erected churches, of which the ruins still exist. Old Goa, Bassein, Chand, and many other settlements, show the labours of the converts of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. Bassein affords a specimen of modern ruins which are comparable to those of Pompeii. In the still walled, though deserted, fortress, were only two families living in the wildest jungle: one of Hindoos, and another of native Christians. The once beautiful churches remained without roofs, with the well-known banyan-tree growing in the interstices of the walls. The presence of that tree is the sure evidence of decay, for as its branches shoot down roots which fasten in every soil, no building raised by human hands can withstand its attacks; all are speedily sapped and levelled to the earth.

It is not necessary to describe the extraordinary efforts made by the different Roman Catholic missionaries. The Jesuits contrived to convert persons belonging to the most perfect order of the Brahmins, who are called "Suniassi." Those zealous missionaries adopted the manner of living of the Brahminical Suniassi, that is, they wore orange-coloured clothes, and abstained from using as food, flesh, fish, and eggs, and sustained the other painful observances, as well as all the hardships and aus-

Z

terities of the caste. They were obliged to bathe in a public tank every morning, and before every repast, of which they have but one each day. In order to carry out their object they studied the Tamil and Teloogoo languages so profoundly as to be able to write them in a masterly manner. An instance is often quoted of an Indian work which was praised by Voltaire as containing the purest doctrines of Christianity, and which was, as he stated, many hundred years old. It has since been discovered to be the work of an Italian missionary, and written in 1621. But although those ardent missionaries succeeded in converting nearly half a million in the south of India, the number of Christians there is but nominal; for as the political changes of Europe did not allow other zealous missionaries to fill up the vacancies as they occurred, the converts were neglected, and many families fell back into their old systems. The Brahmins, as might be expected, resisted the missionaries with all their efforts, and conversions amongst that caste were rare. The next missionaries after the Jesuits were Lutherans, who at first derived their support from the kingdom of Denmark. Schwartz, Kiernander, and others, preached during many years of the last century, but they did not convert many towards the close of that period. William Carey, a man of the most indomitable resolution, went from Northamptonshire to Calcutta to preach the Gospel, and he succeeded against every difficulty in effecting his purpose. Other missionaries from England joined him in 1799, and as the East India Company would not countenance their endeavours, they found an asylum at Serampore, under the Danish

flag. In 1813 the consent of Parliament was obtained for the introduction of ecclesiastical establishments according to the systems of the churches of England and Scotland. The first bishop of the Church of England appointed at that time was Dr. Thomas Fanshawe Middleton, a clergyman of distinguished piety and learning, who assumed charge of all India as his diocese at the close of November, 1814. He had archdeacons at each of the other Presidencies, and on his arrival found fifteen chaplains in Bengal, twelve at Madras, and five in the Bombay Presidency.

## CONCLUDING REMARKS UPON INDIA.

How many individuals are there in this world of ours that throng the gay saloons of what is deemed respectable and even fashionable society, clad in fair garments, presenting an exterior most fascinating and most presentable to the eye of the world, who, if tried for the misdeeds which they have committed, would be found guilty even before an earthly tribunal! These are already guilty before God; but they have played their cards so well, have attended to the outward observances of society so sycophantically before the world, as to have earned for themselves the false reputation of honest men. Society is divided, like the earth, into known and unknown parts. Humanity has also its divisions into the discovered and undiscovered rogues. This *terra incognita* of villany is one of the greatest curses of society. It puts on the garb of every sect and denomination of Christianized humanity in order to distribute its poison



and its treachery the more effectually to those who are honest and unsuspecting. It assumes the form of an angel of light to do the dirty work of the devil. It takes its seat in the highest ranks of the realm as well as in the dirty precincts of St. Giles's. It walks like a ghost, insidiously, stealthily, and invisibly, assuming all the airs and graces of polished society when that is calculated to serve its purpose; and there is no cabin too small—no air too unwholesome—no street too dirty—no hole and corner too filthy, for this monster of iniquity to enter. It associates with slimy reptiles, and the harpies and outcasts of society in dirty cellars, where the light of Heaven seldom enters, inhaling the poisonous air of a dirty and deleterious sewer; it insinuates itself into the presence of the highest aristocracy, in a lofty and perfumed atmosphere, and even ascends to the throne of the Oriental monarch, where it carries on its work of fraud, deceit and treachery. It stalks with comely appearance and business-like habits into the centre of railroad directors, magically dances as if by an act of conjuration into the secret tiller of the banker, to rob the shareholder and defraud the depositor. It enters the parish union, to snatch from the poor his scanty allowance; and would attack an angel of light, if it were possible, to pilfer from its golden wings, to melt them into baser coin, and to present them at the shrine of unholy mammon. The professional pickpocket, the ticket-of-leave man, the members of the swell mob, and the shop-lifter, are gentlemen of a recognized and established *status*. They are known to the police,

the gaoler, the magistracy, and their nearest neighbours. Society in many instances can flee from them, from knowing them personally and the locality they inhabit; but these amateur gentlemen of the *terra incognita*, these *dilettanti* of the black art, who are too cunning and too cowardly to avow openly their sentiments and professional calling, suddenly pounce upon their victims in a manner that defies detection, from the dexterous and stealthy way in which it is performed; leaving the sufferer in a condition as perfectly inexplicable as to the origin and cause of his wrong as the man suddenly knocked down by the cholera, or the blight which attacks the potato. It is the duty of society to catch these refined and accomplished *dilettanti*, and place them in the same category with their braver and more honest brethren, the discovered rogues and the ticket-of-leave men. These cankers and sores occasionally come into view in Great Britain, more especially of late, in defiance of religion, moral training, education, temperance movements, philanthropy, and the strong and iron hand of the law. Thank God, that there are still exceptions in British society. In India, for many centuries, both the Hindoo and Mahometan races exhibit little other than one universal scene of fraud, conspiracy, and treachery. What a fine field this was for Christianity to have worked out its benign and renovating and ennobling influences! It will scarcely be credited, that at a period comparatively recent, the American missionaries were not allowed to enter India, and were compelled to take themselves off either to Burmah or return home—missionaries, from their habits

and manners, far better adapted to carry out their work than the majority of those of our own country, inasmuch as they were men of humble origin, but well trained—not too proud to condescend to acts which would be deemed derogatory by a higher class. The chaplains of the East India Company, I am informed, make a declaration that they will not attempt to convert the natives to Christianity. One of these chaplains, now no longer in their employ, declared to a person with whom I am personally acquainted, that he was miserable during the whole of his residence in India, from having signed this declaration, and never thoroughly regained his peace of mind until he abandoned his appointment. An excellent Christian man, twenty years resident in India, informed me that at his own house he once entertained fifteen missionaries, whom he entreated to preach to the Sepoys, when they one and all made answer “That they dare not.” A Bengal Sepoy was kicked out of his regiment for having embraced Christianity.

We have seen that the police themselves in Bengal are tantamount to thieves. Colonel Cotton has clearly proved that we have not developed the resources of the country ; a duty of paramount importance to the natives of India as well as to ourselves, and which might have been done at a very small cost. One of the civilians of the Company’s service informed me that such was the mal-administration of affairs in India, that every holder of office under the East India Company was naturally expected to leave his morality behind him (if he had any) on rounding the Cape of Good Hope. Mr. Dickens has pretty well

proved to us that out of the supreme courts the administration of justice in India is a mockery and a farce. Need we wonder at what has taken place so recently in India, after such corruption, immorality, and mal-administration. I believe in God as the great Governor and Ruler of the universe, who is the Author of all the good that still clings to fallen humanity, whilst all the evil in the world results from sinful man, wisely permitted by the Deity, who by virtue of His divine attributes and omnipotency, most mercifully and most mysteriously brings good out of the many evils that afflict humanity. I believe that India was allotted by Him to the care of Great Britain; that a noble band of the church-militant should go forth to that distant land, to conquer it in the name of the great I AM. I believe that Mahometanism, Hindooism, and all that belongs to idolatrous worship in that heathen country, ought to receive its death-blow from the hands of Great Britain. To whatever extent I may deplore (and I do) the loss of our country men and women who have suffered those untold barbarities, and that martyrdom from the hands of depraved and merciless savages, nevertheless I believe that their voices from the tomb, not softly accented, but in cries of thunder, now appeal to us, as exemplifying the retributive justice of the great Omnipotent. Let us take warning: the next stroke of Divine justice may be more calamitous than that which we have witnessed, and instead of the horrors of war, massacre, and mutiny suddenly falling upon us in a distant land, the thunderbolt may strike us in Great Britain, in the middle of British hearts, British hearths, and British homes,

surrounded by our wives and our little ones, and all the endearments of the domestic hearth. The education that we have given them has been one unconnected with moral and religious training, thereby turning them into educated heathens and learned infidels, and then making use of their intellects at a rate of remuneration so low as to be well calculated to bring a rapid fortune to the banker, the planter, and the merchant. Is it to be expected that a power, calling itself Christian, enacting such deeds, is to go unpunished? The present high and dominant position of England is due, I believe, to a Wycliffe, who, years before Luther and Calvin began their great work, with other followers, laid the foundation of her greatness, by fostering the Reformation, and rescuing the country from the deadly grasp of the bigoted, selfish, and tyrannical power of the Pope. The Reformation began in good earnest in 1520. In the last year of the sixteenth century, we made our first *entrée* into India, gradually increasing our territory, until we have now got possession of nearly the whole of the country. In 1620 the Puritans, who may be deemed the reformers of the Reformation, started for Plymouth rock, and there laid the foundation of another Protestant power, whose deeds, in arts, arms, science, commerce, and agriculture, are too well known in the United States to require further notice. And since that period we have been adding to our possessions in the four quarters of the globe, and have now arrived, perhaps, at the maximum of our grandeur, or perhaps at a culminating point, at which we may as rapidly sink as we have risen. This Protestantism of ours has

nurtured the arts and the sciences, electric telegraphs, railroads, the Bible Society, the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge, both in America and England, to such a degree as very justly to be the boast of the great Anglo-Saxon as well as the Anglo-American races, while the Roman Catholic countries of Christendom have been fearfully retrograding. It is our duty to examine well the nature and bearings of this Protestantism, as it stands, first in connection with Church and State, as well as in all the other phases which it exhibits in our land—from the small meeting-house of the Methodist of the village, to the solemn cathedral, headed by the bishop.\* History informs us that nations have their rise, growth, and fall, similar to the birth, growth, and death of an individual. Let us take care that our multiform Protestantism contains enough of vital Christianity to stem the storm that threatens to over-ride us. The upstartism and luxurious habits of the present age, united to the ignorance and poverty of our country, with some strong nests of infidelity, and freethinkers in politics and religion, may contain inflammable materials which only require the spark momentarily to ignite them, and which possibly may shatter to pieces the grandeur and dignity of the British Lion. Reform, no doubt, is needed as much in the social and domestic circle as it is in the political one, and the sure way to effect it is to commence by self-reformation. An honest man, when attacked by the roguery of the world, struggles against it with all his might, until he

\* For further information upon this subject, see Howitt's "Colonization and Christianity," published by Longmans.

either converts his assailants or retires from the battle in disgust, to solitude, literature, religion, or the distant colony. And the example that he sets is not lost before his fellow-men. He may lose all in this life to gain that which is to come. India stands in a position the most anomalous when compared with all the other dependencies of Great Britain. A few thousands of our countrymen govern perhaps 200,000,000 of natives, from whose cheap labour they are enabled rapidly to amass fortunes. The two races, although in juxtaposition, are as widely apart as the poles are from the equator. In all our colonies we have developed the resources of the soil, in a certain and gradual ratio of improvement; commerce has sprung up; towns have been built, and the civilization and Christianity of the mother-country have been transplanted with the emigrants to distant lands, and taken full possession of the prairie and the backwood. The reverse has been unfortunately the case with India. Hundreds and thousands of miles may be traversed without meeting even the signs of the civilization of the Anglo-Saxon. I read an article in one of the newspapers, in which it stated all that India took in British goods amounted to no more than £10,927,694—a sum which the one million of inhabitants of Australia and New Zealand almost realize; while the imports of England from India reach £17,500,000. The balance of trade is therefore enormously against us, and it is certain to pay the difference; our brightest jewel drains us of an average of £8,000,000 in specie every year. I believe, if the Americans had held the position that we have held in India

during the last and present centuries, that the entire country would have been intersected with railroads, canals and every imaginable species of improved water carriage. The Americans, for many years past, have imported a kind of drill into India, used for trousers, which supersedes all that Manchester, with its capital and skill, has been able to manufacture.

What have we been about, in the mean time, to have allowed our American cousins to have stolen this march upon us? If one million of people in Australia and New Zealand take £8,000,000 worth of goods from us, what would the extent of revenue amount to for India, at the same ratio? The answer is so plain that it tells a tale of utter neglect, apathy, and almost madness, on the part of ourselves in not having developed the resources of such a grand mine of wealth to the manufacturing interest at home. That a few thousands of white men should have ruled so many millions of heathens, presents one of the most startling facts of modern history. I have said before that India possesses no analogy with any of our colonies. In the latter, people have left their homes in the mother-country to found fresh ones in a distant land, to remain there for good or for evil, through prosperity and adversity. They became rooted in the soil like the oak of the forest; and when the old heads of the family died, a fresh, and vigorous, and healthy, and numerous generation succeeded to the homestead and the farm of the backwood. How many of these sturdy and active pioneers of the American forest have returned to England? I have never met with any from the United States; perhaps there may be some from Canada. India has



no analogy whatever with the bold, adventurous, and hardy settler of the Australian sheep station, or the pioneer emigrant of the American forest. All the people who go there are industrious, endure untold hardships, and fight the battle of life with a firm foot and with indomitable courage, and remain for many generations. The people who go to India are not settlers, but fortune-hunters, who as soon as they have succeeded return to their native country, looking upon India in no other light than a hot-bed or preserve in which some of their cousins, when they have deserted it, may be there transplanted to grow in luxurious habits, indolence, and Oriental magnificence, in having one native to put on a shoe, another to shave him, and a third to brush his hair. I am told that there are certain districts where the European may settle and carry on many of the operations of Western civilization. If this be true, let those districts be immediately opened for free emigration to one and all of the starving and industrious classes of Great Britain and Ireland. Let every man who has a vote and an inclination to go to India, support no member of Parliament at an election unless he pledge himself, when he gets into Parliament, to give his support to some measure which will enable the poor man at home to become a proprietor of the soil in India. In short, make India a colony instead of being a hot-house, or rather a nursery, for the reception of indolent young men, who grow rich without working, and who get pensions without earning them. Let this be done, and the resources of the country will be quickly developed. Railroads calculated to suit the country will then be con-

structed to carry Indian merchandise at a low transit instead of the absurd, expensive, and tardy ones that have been, unfortunately, already laid down. Our shippers, and our merchants, and our manufacturers, will then realize their thousands instead of the miserable trade that they now carry on. The hardy settler will then confront the worshipper of idols, with his axe in hand during the week, and his Bible on the Sunday; thus challenging both Hindoo and Mahometan, either to dig the soil or dispute a religious point. The thing wanted in India is the contact of the two races upon a more friendly footing. Let emigration be tried as an experiment. It is impossible that it could fail so miserably as the present experiment has done through the misrule and mal-administration of the East India Company and the Board of Control. Christianity would then stand a better chance of propagating its principles. The native of New Zealand has adopted the civilization of the white man by talking to him, working with him, laughing, smoking, and cracking his jokes with him, and not by keeping apart as if one were flesh and the other fowl. A New Zealand chief now dines off his plate like an English gentleman. What is there in humanity to prevent such a thing happening in India? God has made of one blood all the nations of the earth, and in that single fact is based the possibility of an amalgamation between races the most opposite. Let the *sanitaria*\* of India be thrown open to the enterprising, adventurous, and unsuccessful colonists of Victoria, who

\* High lands, where people resort in hot weather, at which the atmosphere is cooler.

are accustomed to a sun occasionally, I believe, hotter than India. These Victorians are doing some of the grandest deeds of the nineteenth century. They will, in time, reform the lazy and torpid habits of the settlers of New South Wales, and the six settlements of New Zealand. Let them have the *sanitaria* of India as the foundation of the first colony in that hitherto mismanaged part of the world.

## CHAPTER XX.

## VOYAGE FROM CALCUTTA TO SUEZ.

THE magnificent steam - ship *Bengal* being about to start for the Red Sea, and seeing that peace within a reasonable time was not to be expected, I, on the 24th January, 1858, secured a berth, and then hurried on board with all my goods and chattels, and was not more delighted than surprised to find, not only the captain, but all his officers, gentlemen of good education and superior manners—a circumstance that I never remember to have fallen in with before during the whole of my wanderings in this sublunary world. The crew was a motley one, being composed of English, Mahometans, Chinese, and Arabs; but when dressed in the national costumes of their respective countries, the whole formed a most interesting group for the traveller. When mustered on the poop on Sunday by the officers, many of them in beautifully bleached linen clothes, they formed a spectacle which well contrasted the habits, manners, and dress of the Oriental beside the European. The Mahometans might be seen in groups, seated on the deck of the vessel at meal-times, helping themselves to their rice, their principal article of food, which they

seized with their fingers. At other times they might be observed reading the Koran, either singly or collectively, singing, praying, and bowing their bodies low enough for their heads to touch the deck. These people all seem to be religious; and, instead of making one day in the week their especial sabbath, they practise their devotions on any day of the week, and at any hour of the day. On inquiry, I found, however, that as sailors these Orientals were not equal to the British Jack tar, one of the latter being equal to three of the former at pulling, hauling, and weighing anchor, lifting weights, and all the other exercises practised on board ship. As their qualifications were not equal to the British sailor, in such proportion were they remunerated for their work.

As passengers, we had one nobleman, some Honourables, one general, two colonels, and many other military gentlemen, all belonging to the British army, save one or two officers of the Company's services. We had likewise two missionaries: one, a Frenchman, who had been many years in India, and the other, an Englishman, employed in connection with the London Missionary Society; with numerous ladies to complete the group. We had the natives of fifteen different nations on board, all chattering their various tongues, like an assemblage of strange birds met together for the first time. A melancholy scene presented itself—that of numerous widow ladies, some of them young, shrouded in their weeds, in remembrance of their lost partners, who had earned an honourable laurel on the field of battle. Another equally painful sight was that of some eight or nine officers, some of

them just out of their teens, some walking upon crutches, others with their arms in slings, one incapable of locomotion—all looking thin, sickly, and bearing the fair brow of the invalid—winged, legged, shattered, and shot through, and shot at, like birds in September or a target on the archery ground.

POINTE DE GALLE, IN THE ISLAND OF CEYLON.

Before daylight, on the morning of the 1st of February, I landed at Pointe de Galle, in the island of Ceylon, where, having no guide, I wandered into a private house, taking it for the hotel, where, from the civility of the owner, I, with some difficulty, found my road to the inn, which was shut; but outside sundry turbaned Orientals lay prostrate, snoring loud and long, who, on being awoke, appeared somewhat ruffled on receiving a customer at such an early hour. Hiring a carriage, I instantly posted off to the cinnamon gardens, which I had never seen, a distance of five miles. The road wound round the beach at times, and then suddenly emerged into the magnificent forest of palm-trees, whose naked stems and bunchy umbrella-like tops, thickly studded, presented a scene thoroughly tropical. The whole country seemed to be filled with these majestic trees.

The following were some of the members of the vegetable world: bread-fruit tree, Jack-fruit, indigo, anise, coffee, sugar, rice, the water-tree, nutmeg, cinnamon, clove, orange, cardamom, lemon, pomegranate, croton-oil, &c. I learnt at the gardens that, in zoology, the following might be enumerated as belonging to the island:

▲ ▲

cobra, adder, crocodiles, boas, cheta, buffaloes, elk, deer, elephants, panthers, bears, &c. The roads were some of the most beautiful imaginable. The men-natives wore their hair turned up and rather combed backwards, like women, and fastened with long tortoiseshell combs, giving themselves thereby all the airs and graces, in their head-gear, of the gentler sex.

We were constantly pestered on board ship with numerous jewellers, professing to sell all sorts of gems of the first water, most of which, I believe, were manufactured at Birmingham. Good specimens of tortoiseshell, however, may be obtained. This old town and fortifications, I imagine principally erected by the Dutch, stands in lat.  $6^{\circ}$  N., long.  $80^{\circ} 14'$  E., seventy miles south-east of Colombo. I paid a visit to the Buddhist temple, where I beheld a monstrous wooden image sitting on folded legs, with his head reaching to the top of the building. Had he been upright, he would have reached from the bottom to the top of the temple. A curtain hid the monster from the vulgar eye, until some white man, ready to throw some coppers into a box, presented himself, at which time the curtain was withdrawn to enable the visitor to have a gaze at the falsely-called sacred and ridiculously monstrous beast. He had for associate a lady, somewhat less in stature, in another part of the temple. Both of them were as symmetrical as penny-dolls at a country fair. The boats at Galle are the most remarkable things to be found in the wide creation. They must be seen to be understood. I was told that, under canvas, they are able to sail at the rate of twenty miles an hour.

The next day we weighed anchor and started for Aden. Soon after leaving Ceylon, we sighted the Maldivé Islands. "The Maldives are of coral formation, the largest well wooded with palms; they produce millet, esculent roots, fruit, poultry, cocoa-nuts, oil, honey, tortoiseshell, and cowries. The population is a mixture of Arabs and Hindoos, amounting to about 200,000. The Maldivé Islands are placed under the rule of a sultan, who is tributary to the British Government at Ceylon." In eight days after this we anchored at Aden, and sighted the island of Socotra before landing.

## ADEN.

Aden, in Arabia, contains a population of 30,000. It was captured from the Arabs in 1839 by the forces of the East India Company, and has remained in our possession ever since. It is most valuable as a coaling station. All the coal, however, is imported from England. As the traveller approaches Aden, he is at once struck, and besides thunderstruck, at the high, barren, treeless, shrubless, plantless mountains that boldly rise above the surface of the sea, in chaotic mass, entirely devoid of grass, and scarcely spotted with a single green member of the vegetable kingdom. It is so barren, that I believe neither goat, donkey, rabbit, nor rat could find sustenance without migrating to distant parts. All the provisions for the inhabitants and soldiers come from a distance. They are entirely at the mercy of the Arabs for their vegetables, who sometimes omit the usual supply, upon which occasion a party of our soldiers approach them



back-way, pounce upon them, give them a slight prick with the bayonet, which acts as a spur to their bad memories, and then a fresh supply of garden-stuff very quickly finds its way to the town of Aden. This scene has been re-acted since I left that very remarkable part of the world, in consequence of the usual supplies having been stopped by the neglectful and revengeful Arabs.

On landing at this sterile locality, we were met with noisy and native boys, all anxious to earn a penny by the loan of a donkey; or the hiring of a carriage, with a profusion of ostrich feathers, generally black, with others white, were offered us, at charges so high that they prevented some of the passengers from bargaining with them. Those who had never seen that eccentric and wonderful animal, the camel, here had ample opportunity of observing his peculiar and highly elastic movements as he took his prodigious strides along the sandy desert. In driving up to the town and encampment, the brown barren mountains rose steep as the side of a house, looking more like plastic clay, and comparatively shapeless when compared with all other mountains. They looked wild, chaotic, and uncreated, if such a term may be allowed. They appeared like elementary materials waiting for those geological changes and powers of nature which produce a new thing out of old materials. To use a very common simile, they looked an amorphous mass of dough, waiting for the hand of the baker to put them into shape and form. In passing the entrance to the fortifications the traveller passes through a cleft in the rock, which afforded an

excellent opportunity of examining the mineralogical characters of this strange and eccentric mountain. On examination I found it as hard as any other rock, instead of being formed of plastic clay. Some portions possessed the characteristics of pumice-stone, others were felspathic. Among the few and isolated specimens of plants, one of the commonest belonged to the genus *Reseda*; another, almost as common, belonged to the genus *Sedum*. The town fortifications and encampment looked as strange, as wild, and as eccentric, as either the mountains or the camels. I looked for that refreshing and agreeable appendage to a house—a garden, without being able to discover one. I beheld brown mountains without herbage or grass, bereft of trees and shrubs, possessed of scarcely a weed to paint a green speck upon their monotonous surface; plains arid as the desert, ornamented with the equally brown and sandy-looking creature, the camel; in short, every thing looked dusty, dirty, brown, sandy, dry, and unfruitful, and where the productions of nature were so sparse, where scarcely a green thing was visible to such a degree as would, in all probability, starve a donkey, impoverish a camel, and put even an ostrich into a galloping consumption, it is only fair to remark, that I did see something resembling trees, but only in one locality, where there were not more than half a dozen; they were dwarfed and miserable specimens. To those who wish to see things and nature out of the common track, let them pack up and be off to the town of Aden in Arabia. In the market-place I think I saw 1,500 camels, all seated, lolling and lying in the hot and

scorching sand. The sheep that I saw were extremely beautiful. The shops (or bazaars as they are termed in the East) consisted of a series of spacious holes, excavated in a mass of bricks, without form, order, windows, doors, or any other form of furniture which belongs to a Christian population. Aden has very much improved since it came into our possession. At that date the population did not exceed 1,000; now it is upwards of 30,000.

Galle in Ceylon, and Aden, within a few days' sail of each other, contain scenes so opposite, that the traveller, if subject to spectral delusions, may conclude that at Aden he has seen things so uncommon, so rare, and so startling, as that he may well question the veracity and soundness of his senses. And I can well imagine that some of the mesmeric and clairvoyant tribe, who are remarkable for a strong development of morbid sensibility, would assert, after a visit to Aden, that the town and neighbourhood of that out-of-the-way place were nothing more than a colossal ghost, to be seen at all hours of the day instead of at twelve o'clock at night.

On the 8th of February we quitted Aden for Suez. The voyage through the Red Sea gives occasional glances of islands and the coasts of Africa and Asia, which, from what I heard and saw, I should conclude to be 1,200 miles of coast-line differing very little in character and cultivation to the neighbourhood so recently described. Mount Sinai, or some prominent elevation in front of it, was pointed out to us as being the spot where one of the most memorable and momentous events of sacred history had its origin.

On the 16th of February we landed at Suez, where we expected to remain for the night; and hearing that the accommodations were bad and expensive, I amused myself on board with looking at the surrounding desert instead of going ashore. An order, however, came the same evening at ten, that we were to disembark, to take possession of our carriages, to traverse twenty-four miles of desert before reaching the railroad station. I had only, therefore, a torch-light view of Suez.

The following description is taken from "The Oriental Pocket Companion and Overland Guide."

#### THE RED SEA.

"The Red Sea probably derives its name from 'Idumea,' or 'Edom,' 'red;' or, as some suppose, from the vast quantity of coral with which it abounds; although the black, or Yessur, and the white, or Madripore, only are found: the former, from which the Mahometans make their rosaries, in deep water on the Nubian coast, and the latter on the reefs of Jeddah. It is about 1,200 miles in length and 200 in breadth at the widest part. At high tide its waters have been estimated to be about 30 feet higher than the Mediterranean, and 9 feet lower than the Nile at Cairo; but the surveys recently taken by the French for the Suez canal, make little or no difference in the two levels. That part of the sea miraculously crossed by the Israelites on their flight from Egypt, from Ras Ataka towards Ayum Musa, or Moses' Wells, is not far from the steamers' anchorage-ground."

## SUEZ AND THE DESERT.

"A seaport of Egypt, in latitude  $29^{\circ} 58'$  N., longitude  $32^{\circ} 34'$  E.; has a fixed population of 3,000, and for many centuries possessed a good transit trade. The houses are built of unburnt bricks; the town is miserable in the extreme, and the surrounding country a perfect desert."

I landed in the middle of the strangest scene I ever beheld. A miserable town, situated in the dreary desert, with torch-lights flaring up by the side of the variegated-costumed population; surrounded by camels and myriads of donkeys; the men vociferating, the donkeys braying, the camels moaning; everybody hurrying on through the noisy throng at a risk to find the proper carriage which started at a particular time to meet the train. The time occupied in making the journey of *twenty-four miles*, from Suez to the railroad station, *was from ten at night until between six and seven the following morning*. The road lies through the desert, not well defined, with macadamized materials, bounded right and left with well-grown hedges, and the ornamental tree for a beacon; but the traveller proceeds over the trackless desert, for such it is at midnight, like a vessel of the ocean steering for its port of destination. No wonder, then, that we frequently lost each other, which too often occurred. One carriage broke down, which caused a considerable detention. At times we encountered a mass of huge boulders, strewn accidentally over the flat surface, sometimes so as to present an almost insurmountable barrier, against which the unfortunate vehicle had

to plunge, dive, and dart, into, on, and over, like a vessel at sea, in the middle of breakers, thumping on the barren reef. At times we came to a complete standstill, the wheels being motionless and locked, from the presence of an impassable boulder, which communicated a shock to the passenger which would have sent him flying like a projectile but for the protection afforded by the sides and roof of the carriage. I believe that every driver, and there were twelve or more, took a different direction, like so many vessels leaving port in a brisk breeze; some on the rocks, others stranded among the boulders; some jumping in a manner so wild and ludicrous as to resemble neither the horse nor the antelope, but comparable to nothing else in the world but what it was—a rickety, flexible, and well-seasoned old carriage, suddenly made frantic by an attack of boulders, furiously dancing a hornpipe in the desert all the way from Suez to the railroad. How the poor wounded military endured the shaking need not be told. One man, and a very brave one, too—as far as talking long and loud, and distinguishing himself at meal times by an attack upon all good edibles—was a fellow-passenger with me. When our carriage had to storm some boulder barriers he instantly alighted and walked the desert at night. Imagine vessels at sea, without chronometers, no means of ascertaining latitude, longitude, or the true position of the ship, furiously sailing in an unknown sea without rudder and compass. Such was our position in the desert, and I marvel much that twelve wrecked carriages were not stranded among the boulders that we encountered during that eventful night.

## THE DESERT.

We arrived at the railroad station, where we were provided with breakfast. A scene occurred here that I shall not readily forget. We happened to arrive some time before the breakfast-table was spread with the various viands and edibles with which we were to be entertained. Several hungry young military gentlemen were complaining that the breakfast was not ready, and that it ought to have been, simply because they were hungry. One old gentleman, who ought to have known better, with more barbarism than civilization, with more pig-headedness and obstinacy than prudence or polish, proposed to these young men that they, one and all, should proceed to the kitchen, seize the things, and place them on the table after their own fashion. I proceeded to the point of attack, to witness this barbarous and ungentlemanlike performance, in a country whose territory we were kindly allowed to traverse as the nearest road to our distant possessions; where, as the representatives of the great Anglo-Saxon race, we are bound, by all the ties of philanthropy and Christianity, to treat our enemies kindly, and more especially to set a good example to those who had thus nobly befriended us. One of the servants in the kitchen, becoming enraged at such an act of violence and spoliation, confronted a young gentleman who was carrying away an enormous dish, and addressed him as follows:—"Do you call yourself an English gentleman, to come into this kitchen and carry off anything you may please, without our permission? I tell you,

sir, that I defy you." Upon which he instantly snatched the dish out of his hand, and sent him, like one convicted of a misdemeanour, to reflect upon his unjustifiable and ungentlemanlike behaviour. It was here that I witnessed a most sublime sunrise, whose rays shot over the lonely desert, whose surface resembled a beach deserted by the ocean; or a sea bottom, dotted occasionally with the small and paltry tent of the wild occupants of the desert, who had pitched their tents near to the railway station, garbed in the fanciful costume of the land of ancient Egypt. The desert, with its flat and extensive accumulation of sand: sand so fine that its particles are driven by the action of the wind like the spray of the ocean, in such showers that when the simoom sets in, death has been dealt to the traveller, destruction to the caravan, and annihilation even to armies. On this grand and startling division of the earth's surface, where the eye of the traveller rests upon an interminable plain, bereft of trees and grass, flat and wide as the ocean itself, with its particles of sand ebbing and flowing; in this wonderful and monotonous district, this ocean of sand, whose presence infuses into the mind of the contemplative traveller the same awe and sublime emotion as when he sails upon the great ocean itself; even here, in this sterile world, the vegetable kingdom has a habitation and a name, although thinly scattered throughout its extensive domain. Here may be seen the dromedary or camel laden with the goods of Egypt, steering through the desert with gigantic stride and elasticity of step, like a ship on the ocean, with his head erect, looking at the heavens as it



were for a mark to steer by, while his ponderous limbs, borne down with heavy weights, move with an alacrity and grace truly astonishing. The *contour* of his figure seems to be a faint resemblance to the old pyramids of his native land. Taking him altogether I think he is the most useful of animals; and although ugly in figure, he walks with a gracefulness of step that is surprising to behold, and is more perfectly adapted and more suitable for the desert than any other animal. When seen traversing the desert, in the distance his appearance more resembles a picture than a thing of life. He looks as noble in the arid plain as the ship on the ocean, or the cathedral in the green and grassy landscape. When overladen his cries are loud and long, such as to touch every one not possessed of a heart of stone. Another inhabitant of the desert I would have paid a trifle to have seen, viz., the ostrich. It is not found in the neighbourhood of Cairo, but belongs to the deserts of Abyssinia.

A few patches of leafless stunted shrubs occasionally might be seen, which, with two or three species of small birds, few in number, and a crow, more plentiful, were the only signs of life I beheld in the desert. Sometimes the surface slightly undulated, and in other parts rose into mountains of sand, probably produced by the frightful simoom, or a succession of more frequent winds that blow over these sterile, lonesome, and uninhabited parts of the earth's surface. After breakfast we mounted the steam-horse, and travelled at the rate of more than twenty miles an hour—a pace which must have surprised the few denizens of the desert when they first beheld it. We had

one or two glances at the mirage, which was too faint to be perfectly understood. All of a sudden an extensive green plateau to the right came into view, ornamented with trees, studded with houses, with a universal sweep of green pasturage and cereal crops rose into view. I was informed that this was the ancient Goshen, where the Israelites of old dwelt under the rule of Joseph. I give it as I heard it; I do not vouch for it. The pyramids then presented themselves, towering to the skies. The rotundiform mosques and lofty mansions next rose into view, with old Nile meandering in the fertile plain; the monotonous and dreary desert suddenly disappeared, and the traveller found himself, thanks to the rapidity of steam, quickly transported as if by an act of magic, to Cairo, the capital of ancient and scriptural Egypt.

## CAIRO.

At this remarkable place I only remained a few hours, and those were spent in rapid sight-seeing, in company with others, which circumstance prevented me taking a single note. I make no apology here for introducing a description of old Cairo, written by one of the most accomplished, learned, and classical travellers of modern times, the author of "The Crescent and the Cross:"—

"On emerging from the lanes of Boulac (the port of Cairo), Cairo, grand Cairo! opens to the view. And never yet did fancy flash upon the poet's eye a more superb illusion of power and beauty than the 'City of Victory' presents from the distance. The bold range of Mokattam moun-

tains is purpled by the rising sun ; its craggy summits are cut clearly out against the sky, as it runs like a promontory into an ocean of verdure ; here, wavy with a breezy plantation of olives ; there, darkened with acacia groves. Just where the mountain sinks upon the plain the citadel stands upon its lost eminence ; and, widely spread beneath it, lies the city, a forest of minarets with palm-trees intermingled, and the domes of innumerable mosques, rising like enormous bubbles over the sea of houses. Here and there richly green gardens are islanded within the sea, and the whole is girt round with picturesque towers and ramparts, occasionally revealed through vistas of the wood of sycamores and fig-trees that surround it. It has been said, that 'God the first garden made, and the first city—Cain.' Here both creations seem commingled with the happiest effect. The approach to Cairo is a spacious avenue, lined with the olive or the sycamore ; here and there the white marble of a fountain gleams through the foliage, or a palm-tree waves its plummy head above the tombs. Along this highway a masquerading-looking crowd is swarming towards the city ; ladies wrapped closely in white veils, women of the lower class carrying water on their heads, and covered only with a long blue garment that reveals too plainly the exquisite symmetry of the young and the hideous deformity of the elders ; here are camels perched upon by black slaves, magpied with white napkins round their head and loins ; there, are portly merchants, with turbans and long pipes, gravely smoking on their knowing-looking donkeys ; here, an Arab dashes through the crowd at full gallop,

or a European, still more haughtily, shoves aside the pompous-looking, bearded throng. Water-carriers, calenders, Armenian barbers,—all the *dramatis personæ* of the 'Arabian Nights' are there. And now we reach the city wall, with its towers as strong as mud can make them. It must not be supposed that this mud architecture is of the same nature that the expression would convey in Europe. No! Overshadowed by palm-trees, and a crimson banner, with its star and crescent, waving from the battlements, and camels couched beneath its shade, and swarthy Egyptians in many-coloured robes, reposing in every niche,—all this makes a mud wall appear a very respectable fortification in this land of illusion. And now we are within the city. Protean powers! What a change! A labyrinth of dark, filthy, intricate lanes and alleys, in which every smell and sight from which nose and eye revolt, meet one at every turn (and one is always turning). The stateliest streets are not above twelve feet wide; and, as the upper stories arch over them towards one another, only a narrow serpentine seam of blue sky appears between the toppling verandahs of the winding streets. Occasionally a string of camels, bristling with fagots of firewood, sweeps the streets effectually of their passengers; lean, mangy dogs are continually running between your legs, which afford a temporary passage in this petticoated place; beggars in rags, quivering with vermin, are lying in every corner of the street; now, a bridal, or a circumcising, procession squeezes along, with music that might madden a drummer; now, the running footmen of some bey or pasha endeavour to jostle you

towards the wall, unless they recognize you as an Englishman, one of that race whom they think the devil himself can't frighten, or teach manners to ; here, is a water-carrier, with his jar of cool sherbet, adorned with fresh flowers ; he tinkles little brazen saucers to announce his progress, and receives half a farthing for each draught ; there, is a beggar, devouring his crust, but religiously leaving a portion of it in some clean spot for the wild dogs ; now, an old man stoops to pick up a piece of paper, and to put it by, 'lest,' says he, 'the name of God be written on it, and it be defiled ;' here, is a lady of some harem, mounted *à la Turque* on her donkey, and attended by her own slave and her husband's eunuch ; she might seem to be a mere bundle of linen, but that a pair of brilliant eyes relieve the ghastly appearance that might figure well in a *tableau* as an Irish 'banshee.' Mean-looking and crowded as is the greater part of Cairo, there are some extensive squares and stately houses. Among the former is the Esbekeyeh, by which you enter the city ; a place about a mile in circumference, occupied by a large plantation, divided by straight avenues, and surrounded by a dirty canal. A wide road, shaded by palm and sycamore trees, borders this canal, forming a street of tall mud-coloured houses, of very various architecture, but delicately and elaborately carved. The best buildings in the Esbekeyeh are the palaces of Ibrahim and Abbas Pasha, and the new Hotel d'Orient. The Roumeleyeh is another wide space, where fairs and markets are held, criminals executed, and other popular amusements celebrated. The most interesting building in Cairo is, undoubtedly, the

citadel, overlooking the city, and containing Mehemet Ali's 'town house.' Here are the remains of Saladin's palace, and the commencement of a magnificent mosque, from whose terraced roof there is, perhaps, the finest view in the world. All Lower Egypt lies spread out, as in a map, before you; a great emerald set in the golden desert, bossed with the mountains that surround it. This is the most indecorous and dissolute metropolis that the sun shines upon. The women seem all secluded in the interior of the harem, or in the no less impenetrable garments that conceal their persons and their faces in the streets. The men all wear the yet more baffling disguise of patriarchal appearance and stern formality. As you walk through these masquerading streets, among men whose thoughts appear abstracted from the earth, and women, who are veiled, or in mourning, except their flashing eyes, you might imagine you beheld the people of Nineveh the day after they had repented. No Dead Sea fruit ever presented a more hypocritical exterior or a truer type. Enter into their houses and enquire of their household gods; listen to their familiar conversation, and study the complexion of their thoughts; mark the objects of their desire, their ambition, and their zeal; and you will at once see the necessity of such strict observance of appearances to cloak the tissue of sensuality and guilt that pervades the population of Egypt. In the streets perhaps there are none of the manifestations of vice too usual in European cities; but in the latter the moral filth is confined, principally at least, to sewers, which, foul as they may be, are only partial; but in Cairo the whole city is

B B

so inundated with uncleanness that their sewers are undistinguishable, and it would seem that the ocean that now wraps the Cities of the Plain could alone purify its polluted precincts. Cairo, nevertheless, affords to the traveller and the student many sources of entertainment and information. There is an excellent library, liberally open to all strangers, principally under the care of our consul, Mr. Walne. There is also a literary institution, founded by Dr. Abbott and Mr. Priess, having in view not only a collection of literature connected with Egypt, but the publication, from time to time, of new discoveries and old MSS."

These are but mere sketches, which are uninteresting, I fear, to those who do not visit Cairo, and too meagre for those who do. I shall not allude to the courts of justice further than to repeat what I heard of them from natives and from Europeans, that the name is a melancholy irony applied to tribunals in which the unblushing bribery is only to be equalled by the profound ignorance of those who administer the laws. The objects of interest in the neighbourhood of Cairo are very numerous: leaving for the present the pyramids, let us canter off to Heliopolis, the On of Scripture. It is only five miles of a pathway, shaded by sycamore and plane trees, from which we emerge occasionally into green savannahs or luxuriant corn-fields, over which the beautiful white ibises are hovering in flocks. In Heliopolis, the Oxford of old Egypt, stood the great Temple of the Sun. Here, the beautiful and the wise studied love and logic 4,000 years ago; here, Joseph was married to the fair Asenath; here, Plato and Herodotus pursued philosophy and his-

tory ; and here, the darkness that veiled the great sacrifice on Calvary was observed by a heathen astronomer. We found nothing, however, on the site of this ancient city, except a small garden of orange-trees, with a magnificent obelisk in the centre. People talk of the ruins of the Temple of the Sun as being discoverable here, and there are reports about a sphinx ; but we could discover neither. Here is the garden of Metarieh, where grew the celebrated balm of Gilead, presented by the Queen of Sheba to Solomon, and brought to Egypt by Cleopatra.

On our return towards Cairo we were shown the fountain which refreshed, and the tree which shaded, the Holy Family in their flight to Egypt. In most cities we find a fringe of suburbs, that prepares us for the transition from busy streets to silent fields ; but at Damascus, Jerusalem, and Cairo, the moment you issue from the gates you are in the desert, and the hyena and the Arab prowl within hearing of the citizen. In a lonely valley, about a mile from Cairo, stand the tombs of the Mamelukes ; these are mausolean palaces of great beauty and the richest Saracenic architecture ; they are now fast falling to decay, and only inhabited, or rather haunted, by some out-cast Arabs and troops of wild dogs. They form a grand cemetery of their own, surrounded by the desert. About five miles beyond these tombs is the "petrified forest," it is a vast, shelterless wilderness of sand, strewed with what appeared the chips of some gigantic carpenter's shop. There are no roots, much less any appearance of a standing tree. I have seen fragments of this petrified wood in other parts of the desert, which



seemed to belong to the sycamore and palm trees. They are found in the driest and most shelterless places, and when living must have had a hard time of it, exposed like Niobe to all the arrows of Apollo; why, however, like her, they should have turned to stone, not even the naturalists—those mythologists of phenomena—have attempted to explain.

I remained but one day at Cairo. Early the next morning the 'bus was at the door to convey us to the railway station, in which we were soon wafted over the delta of the Nile, where luxuriant crops of every kind presented a strange contrast to the wild scenes of the desert. A beautiful white bird, the ibis, with plover and crows in abundance, reminded one of the fertile scenes of Old England. We passed the Nile, and in a few hours the town of Alexandria quickly presented itself to our view.

#### ALEXANDRIA.

Here I remained but for a few hours, which again prevented me from taking any notes. I shall quote a few lines from Mr. Warburton respecting this very ancient town:—

“In the time of the Pharaohs the Egyptians displayed as much jealousy of the Phenicians and other Mediterranean navigators as the Celestial empire has done in modern times with regard to ‘barbarians.’ Naucrates, at the Canopic mouth, was the Canton of Egypt in those days. Little business, however, seems to have been transacted there; the trade of the valley of the Nile looked only eastward; and Joseph received port-dues

from Kosseir nearly 4,000 years ago. Alexander found a colony of Greeks settled at Racotis. His keen perception at once discovered what we have only just found out, that this was, in truth, the seaport of all India. Dinocrates was commissioned to create a city, which the Macedonian invested with his name, and thus started into existence the haven of our search. It has been truly said that the ancient city 'has bequeathed nothing but its ruins and its name' to the modern Alexandria. Though earth and sea remain unchanged, imagination can scarcely find a place for the ancient walls, fifteen miles in circumference. The vast streets, through the vista of whose marble porticoes the galleys on Lake Mareotis exchanged signals with those upon the sea; the magnificent temple of Serapis on its platform of a hundred steps; the 4,000 palaces, and the homes of 600,000 inhabitants; all that is now visible within the shrunken and mouldering walls is a piebald town; one half European, with its regular houses, tall, white, and stiff; the other half Oriental, with its mud-coloured buildings and terraced roofs, varied with fat mosques and lean minarets. The suburbs are encrusted with the wretched hovels of the Arab poor; and immense mounds and tracts of rubbish occupy the wide space between the city and its walls; all beyond is a dreary waste. Yet this is the site Alexander selected from his wide dominions, and which Napoleon pronounced to be unrivalled in importance. Here, luxury and literature, the Epicurean and the Christian, philosophy and commerce, once dwelt together. Here stood the great library of antiquity—'the assembled souls of all

that men held wise.' Here, Cleopatra, '*vainqueur des vainqueurs du monde*,' revelled with her Roman conquerors. Here, St. Mark preached the truth upon which Origen attempted to refine; and here, Athanasius held warlike controversy. Here, Amru conquered; and here, Abercrombie fell.

"Looking now along the shore, beneath me lies the harbour, in the form of a crescent; the right horn occupied by the palace of the pasha, his harem, and a battery; the left, a long low swamp of land, alive with wind-mills; in the centre is the city; to the westward, the flat sandy shore stretches monotonously away to the horizon; to the eastward, the coast merges into Aboukir Bay. The present population of Alexandria is estimated at 80,000, including the garrison, sailors of the fleet, and workmen employed in the arsenal and docks. Pompey's Pillar, erected in honour of the Emperor Diocletian, stands on a rising ground, a little to the south of the present walls: its height is 98 feet, and the diameter of the shaft, which is formed of a single block of granite 73 feet in length, is 9 feet 8 inches."

The two obelisks, usually called Cleopatra's Needles, cannot fail to strike the traveller. They were brought by one of the Roman Emperors from the city of Heliopolis. Each is formed of a single block of granite about 70 feet long, with a diameter at the base of 7 feet 7 inches. The next day we embarked on board the *Pera* for Malta.

Feb. 20.—As nothing worthy of notice occurred, I shall not trouble my readers with any further accounts of life on the ocean-wave, but land him at once at Malta.

## MALTA.

Here I remained only for a few hours, in company with my fellow-passengers, which prevented me taking notes. I shall again borrow a few words from Mr. Warburton :—

“La Valetta is a sort of hybrid between a Spanish and an Eastern town ; most of its streets are flights of steps, to which the verandahs of the houses are like gigantic banisters. The terraced roofs restore to the cooped-up citizens nearly all the space lost by building upon ; and there are not probably less than 500 acres of promenadable roof in, or rather on, the city. The church of San Giovanni is very gorgeous, with its vaulted roof of gilded arabesque, its crimson tapestries, finely carved pulpits, and its floor resembling one vast escutcheon, being a mosaic of knightly tombs, on which the coats of arms are finely copied in coloured marble and precious stones. The chapel of the Madonna in the eastern aisle is guarded by massive silver rails, saved from French rapacity by the cunning of a priest, who painted them wood-colour. Notwithstanding all the wealth and splendour of this cathedral, its proudest and most chivalric ornament is a bunch of old rusty irons, suspended on the crimson tapestry. These are the keys of Rhodes ; and these the order, overcome but unconquered, carried away with them from their ancient seat—the bulwark of Christendom. The hotels of the different nations (or tongues as they are called) are palaces that bear testimony to the taste and power of their former proprietors. The principal are

the Auberge de Castile and Provence, and the palace of the Grand Master, now that of the British Governor. The others are converted into barracks; and probably the costumes of the olden time did not differ more from one another than those of its present military occupants: the dark-green of the Riflemen, the scarlet uniform of the 88th, and the varied garb of the Highlander, 'all plaided and plumed, in his tartan array.' Every costume of Europe, Asia, and Africa, is to be met with in the streets, which swarm with the most motley and picturesque population. The brilliant sunshine gives an almost prismatic hue to every object, from the gorgeously clad Turk to the beautiful parrot-fish, streaked with every colour of the rainbow; from the fruit and vegetables, ranged on tables along the *pavé*, to the roguish-looking children that persecute you with flowers. The population, in both town and country, abounds in a proportion eight times as great as in England.\* Being very frugal and industrious they are just able to keep themselves alive

\* "Malta is about 60 miles in circumference, containing 130,000 inhabitants. It is composed principally of magne-sian limestone; and, being cultivated with great labour, produces oranges, cotton, indigo, saffron, sugar, and large quantities of melons, grapes, and other fruits of the soil of Sicily, which has been carried hither. Corn is grown in sufficient quantities to supply the island for six months; the rest is imported. Game is supplied by the little adjacent island of Comino. The population has nearly doubled since the island came into British occupancy. The revenue derived from this island is about £100,000, and the expenditure there about £88,000, exclusive, of course, of what the garrison and shipping expend. The Emperor Charles V. presented the island to the Knights-Hospitallers when they were dispossessed of Rhodes."

at present ; but what is to become of them a few years hence it is difficult to guess. The celibacy enjoined to the Knights produced its usual licentious results ; and the order bequeathed its morals to the present inhabitants—a legacy which does not tend to diminish their numbers. Many of the women are very beautiful, combining the gazelle eye of the East with the rich tresses of the North, and the statuesque profile of Greece and Italy. Their peculiar head-dress, the *onella*, contributes not a little to the effect of beauty. This is a black silk scarf, worn over the head like a veil, but gathered in on one side, so as not to eclipse the starry eyes, which it seems always endeavouring to cloud over. The old aristocracy, proud and poor, form a society among themselves, to which the English are seldom admitted. Nothing can be more melancholy-looking than their high-walled enclosures, scattered over the island ; in these, nevertheless, they maintain their exclusiveness and hauteur in not undignified poverty. A little beyond Citta Vechia is Saint Paul's Bay, which, notwithstanding the arguments (well founded as it seems to me) of modern authors against Malta being the Melita of the Apostle, retains the traditionary honour, of which no pen and ink can now deprive it."

Here I remained only a few hours, being hurried on board to continue the voyage to Gibraltar, where I landed in the middle of wind, rain, and darkness, on the 27th of February.

## GIBRALTAR.

The town, taking it altogether, is more uniform than the generality of towns in England: no little paltry cottages or small shops crouched beneath the tall houses, which are tastefully constructed. The houses are perched, like the eagle, on the mountain's side, at different altitudes, where streets and roads run zigzag as the forked lightning; and where, in making the ascent, the pedestrian who is not provided with good lungs, will have to wait and recruit his oxygen: a very favorable opportunity for reviewing the many interesting views of distant mountains and undulating plains, all washed by the beautiful water of the Mediterranean. Most probably at some ancient epoch the site of these streets was brought into being by a grand geological catastrophe, which broke the line of continuity between Africa and Europe. The isolated rock of Gibraltar, nearly surrounded by the sea, seems to be part and parcel of a range of mountains from which it may have been separated in a similar manner. A few miles from the coast line, a range of hills may be observed, in the same line of direction to which at one period of the earth's history it may have been placed in juxta-position. It is only twelve miles across to Ceuta in Africa. An earthquake acting upon this area, accompanied by an act of subsidence, may have submerged a range of mountains, whose summits now form the bottom of the ocean. The excavated galleries, where pigeon-holes peep aloft, provided with cannon at a considerable altitude, are very curious, and, perhaps, as a work of

art, may be ranked amongst the greatest rarities of the old rock. St. Michael's Cave I did not see, having learnt that it would require an illumination of candles to exhibit it in all its many peculiarities; and having very recently explored one in New Zealand, I had but little inclination to pay it a visit. Gibraltar Rock, when seen in the distance, looks like a leviathan suddenly risen from the sea, or the hull of a vessel keel upwards. The ornamental specimens of this rock are only incrustations, or stalactites, covering certain parts. I allude to those specimens polished by the lapidary into every imaginable shape and form. Being one of the most southerly points of Europe, its vegetation is most peculiar. I was no less amazed than delighted to see the aloe and the cactus rearing their singular forms by the side of well-grown geraniums, which, in most parts, might be seen decorating the rock as plentiful as weeds in a field. I was on the look out for the banana, but failed in catching a glimpse of it. It requires the air and climate of Madeira, I was informed, to nurture and foster it; the south of Spain being too cold. I found myself surrounded with a most extraordinary vegetation, but, sad to say, after making many inquiries I could learn nothing upon the subject. How strange that the flora of one of the most interesting, as well as the most frequented and southern, localities in Europe, should not have been written! Let us hope, if natural history be not already introduced into the army as part of the curriculum of education, that it speedily will be. From the number of military gentlemen who are here stationed, surely some of them might be found both capable and



willing to give their heads and their heels to such an undertaking. Even the residents seemed to be ignorant of the trees growing in their gardens and grounds. In marching over the rock I met with the following *genera*: crocus, calendula, spartium, and chrysanthemum, with a host of beautiful plants that I had never previously seen. The orange-tree luxuriates in the gardens. At fifteen miles from Gibraltar the cork-tree is found, to which locality I made an excursion to obtain a specimen. In that neighbourhood I fell in with the ash, poplar, wild olive, Leontodon, furze, spartium, daisy, and large canes—such as are used for naughty boys—some of them large and long enough to make good fishing-rods. The cane, cactus, and aloe, are all employed for common fencing. I have heard that the peony and rhododendron are to be met with, growing wild, not far distant from the Straits. Monkeys abound on the Rock, the only part of Europe in which they are found. They have been here from time immemorial, and it is supposed that they have been introduced from Africa.

“At the last census taken in 1840, the resident civil population amounted to 16,000, of whom about 9,000 were natives, 900 British subjects, 2,000 Spaniards, 1,000 Genoese, and 600 Portuguese. Of the 1,800 Jews (who appear more numerous, being always in the streets) by far the greater portion are natives; they form the most quiet and orderly part of the population; and to this fractional part of the chosen race, Gibraltar may well be considered another land of promise. They are under no peculiar restraint, but enjoy equal rights, privileges, and protection, with the Christians. They

wear the jelebea, the tunic, and the gabardine, in true Jewish style, although the richer class adopt the Christian garb; and their appearance is considered to be the same as it was in the days of Solomon and David."

Moors and Greeks add their variegated and picturesque costumes to the peculiar head-dress of the Spanish lady in her becoming mantilla, with a black veil appended, which just touches the back part of the head, where neither bonnet nor cap are seen, when she joins the public promenade.

The harbour of Gibraltar affords but little shelter for shipping. There is no custom-house examination to undergo, and the fort exacts no dues upon merchandise, which tends, not a little, to make Gibraltar a great place of business, whose harbour, at all seasons of the year, is visited by ships from every quarter of the globe. There are two good libraries: one containing 3,000 books, some of them rare copies, with periodicals and newspapers; and the garrison library, expressly for the use of the military, possesses 20,000 volumes. Algeiras and San Roque, towns containing several thousands of inhabitant, are both within five miles of the town of Gibraltar. The natives of Gibraltar, although as Spanish as the above-named towns, are unusually prejudiced against their native brethren, and are, at any time, most ready to shoulder the musket and fight for Queen Victoria. They are much annoyed at not being allowed to enrol themselves among the military, and speak of that privilege having been conceded to Malta in terms of reprobation. They say, "If Malta has its regiment of fencibles, why

should not we have the same? we are quite as willing to fight for the Queen of England as they, and quite as able to bear the brunt of the battle."

The weather, during my stay, for four days in succession, was the most miserable imaginable. Gales of wind, with continuous dark clouds, accompanied with as great a downfall of rain as I ever witnessed, enveloped the Rock, making the beautiful Mediterranean water as turbid as a pond, and shutting out, at the same time, the fine ethereal blue sky that canopies this delightful part of Europe. The military and the natives, I was informed, do not pull together. I was told that the former never invite the latter to their balls. The natives' return the compliment by excluding the military. A civilian, upon one occasion, entertained a number of his friends at a grand ball; four of the military, a little the worse for liquor, took it into their heads to present themselves uninvited; upon which occasion the civilians set to; the military handled their swords, perhaps without using them, merely threatening. An affray took place, in which the officers were worsted. Seeing that the garrison enjoy their favourite sport of hunting over Spanish ground, would it not be better policy to carry themselves less stiff, and amalgamate a little more with the natives? The following is from the "Gibraltar Guide:"—

"From a certain point along the whole range of the western side, until Land Port, adjoining the Rock, is a continuation of works, batteries, and bastions. Gibraltar has long been considered impregnable, but even these works, not being deemed sufficient, other new ones, immensely

strong, are constructing, and carried on with great activity. When we contemplate the position of this Rock, its natural defences, the skill and ingenuity displayed in converting every point into one of attack, or defence, the 800 guns, some of immense calibre, bristling at every corner; when we look at the regiments and artillery within, in the highest state of discipline, every soldier a model; at the 30,000 stand of arms at the grand store; at the numerous barracks, quarters, and store-houses filled with supplies of all sorts; and when we see the strict regularity with which the military duty, day and night, is maintained; convinced that at a signal a lighted match would, in a quarter of an hour, be found at every touch-hole, we may with perfect truth exclaim,

“ ‘ Gibraltar’s strength would laugh a siege to scorn.’ ”

One of the sights that will interest the traveller, and, above all, the ichthyologist, is the astonishing display of the numerous and variously spangled fishes that inhabit the Mediterranean sea, as seen in the fish-market, as well as vegetables peculiar to the south of Europe, which may be viewed in the same locality.

## CHAPTER XXI.

## GIBRALTAR TO ENGLAND.

ON the 6th of March, after remaining a week on the Rock, I embarked in a fearful gale of wind in a small boat with four oars, to put myself on board the *Alhambra* steamer, bound for England. The gale was so strong as to render canvas out of the question; the sailors dare not set sail for fear of capsizing. With a long pull, and a strong pull, and a pull altogether, we fortunately rowed before the wind at a fearful risk, the sea frequently threatening to swamp us, causing one of the most unusual movements I ever remember to have felt in a small boat. She seemed to hesitate at times, to struggle and stagger like a drunken man. At last we reached the steamer, where I learnt from the captain that the Admiralty agent had not landed the mail in consequence of the fearful gale which was then blowing. He remarked, "We shall not sail to-night; I shall not put to sea in such weather, and if I had been in your place I should not have run the risk that you have incurred. I remember well," he continued, "the time when a small boat during a tremendous blow (and blow it does round the Rock), was sent flying into the

air by the action of the wind, with all hands, who were unfortunately drowned."

The next morning the gale had subsided, when we up anchor, and steamed away from the strongest of fortifications, and one of the most remarkable rocks (especially in an historical point of view) to be found in the world. In the Straits both the land and the water presented objects of great interest to the traveller and tourist. The fearful gale that had just subsided, accompanied with a deluge of rain, had brought down from the land, through the channels of many rivers, mud and debris, which contrasted strongly with the transparent hue of the Mediterranean water. In certain parts of the Straits a dirty muddy line of demarcation joined to a beautiful sea-green water was as distinctly seen, and as correctly drawn, and as well defined, as if it had been done on a map, and quite as well developed in point of contrast as two distinct colours on the canvas of the painter. From what I could discern, both on the Spanish and African shores, I should say that their fine climates produced but a tithe of the various crops of which they were capable under good management. There was a comparative absence of the farm-house, the squire's residence, the villa, and the village. The same day we landed at Cadiz.

## CADIZ.

Through the kindness of the Admiralty agent I was enabled to go ashore in his boat, which gave me an opportunity of glancing at the town. Our stay was not longer than three quarters of an

c c

hour, which afforded us only a peep at what presented itself to our gaze; the greater part of that time being spent at the consul's in delivering and receiving letters, &c. The consul turned out to be an old *employé* from my own county, and one connected with a name well known in that part of the country. I passed the Alameda (the great Spanish place of rendezvous and promenade) without observing any well-dressed persons; in short, all the inhabitants at that time (five in the evening) appeared to be working people. The gates close at a certain hour, and as that time drew near, we hurried away to the city-walls, just in time to pass through them. The population of Cadiz, at a guess, I should say, may amount to 70,000 or 80,000. The houses are high; the streets very narrow, and badly paved. Each window was barricaded with iron-work jutting out, its green complexion giving a somewhat picturesque appearance to the town. We quickly reached the *Alhambra* and soon steamed away for Lisbon.

#### LISBON.

We reached the capital of Portugal at night, when the twinkling lights and the light-house glare told us that many thousands of human beings were enjoying themselves around the domestic hearth. I landed early the next morning to see all that was worth seeing during a stay of a few hours. The reservoir and aqueduct may be enumerated amongst the rare sights of the town. Having provided myself with a carriage, and a guide who spoke excellent English, I soon

found myself at the great reservoir which supplies the town with water. This aqueduct is many miles in length. The source of the water lies beyond Cintra, I was told,—a distance, perhaps, of twenty miles. The reservoir is a remarkably handsome affair, being roofed in as carefully and elegantly as if it were part of a royal mansion; having a flight of steps leading to the top, where a terraced roof, at a good altitude, affords a fine view of the town.

After this, I started for the extinct convent of the Jeronymos at Belem, where I beheld one of the most remarkable old buildings I ever met with in all my travels. No description of the peculiar features and mode of ornamentation adopted, could convey to the reader a tithe of the realities that are therein found. The most remarkable feature in connection with it was the admission of light so sparingly as to shut out the sun at mid-day, and produce a light shorn of all splendour and brilliancy, so as to resemble twilight or evening. It was one of those buildings that survived the great earthquake. It is used now for educational purposes, where an infinity of boys and girls may be seen imbibing the instruction there afforded.

The royal chapel of St. John the Baptist next claims the attention of the tourist. Here are three very remarkable mosaic pictures. The plate of the centre is a representation of St. John baptizing Christ in the Jordan. Another to the right represents the Annunciation of the Virgin Mary, and on the left the Descent of the Holy Ghost. These plates were taken from the paintings of notable artists: that of St. John by Michael Angelo; the Annunciation by Guido;



and, lastly, that of the Holy Ghost by Raphael Urbino. Fifteen years were spent in the making of these plates, by the ablest artists of their day. In the centre of the floor, which is also of mosaic work, was executed a globe, which signified that these plates were the most precious in all Europe. The two frames of the roof are of Carrara marble, and were made under the superintendence of Magni, a renowned sculptor, assisted by Alexander Giusti, who came bringing with him this said chapel (its construction being such as allowed its being taken to pieces), and who afterwards remained in Portugal. There are in this chapel eight columns of lapis-lazuli, and the rest of the precious stones of which this chapel is constructed, are amethyst, cornelian, the alabaster and granite of Egypt, stones of Rosso antico and verde antique (which are now wanting), Roman marble, porphyry, and the ancient jaulo.

In 1744, this chapel was placed in St. Peter's Church, at Rome, and Benedict XIV. consecrated it; and, after celebrating mass, was taken down, and from thence conveyed to Portugal, and, in the year 1746, was placed in the church of St. Rock. It was founded at Rome by Don John V., King of Portugal. I afterwards paid a visit to the castle, which stands on an eminence, and affords an excellent view of the town and neighbourhood. Parliament Square, with the equestrian statue of Don Joseph in the centre, with one side open to view, bounded by the harbour, presents an imposing appearance to the stranger. Don Pedro Square possesses a very singular pavement, is spacious, bounded by lofty houses, where the Donna Maria Theatre, a very respectable

building, occupies a site. At noon, the same day, we continued our voyage to Vigo.

## VIGO.

We arrived here again too late to land our mail, and were consequently compelled, through either the indolence or the negligence of the authorities, to remain for the night. As usual, next morning very early, I went ashore with the Admiralty agent, and saw as much of the town as I required to see. Vigo is a small town, situated in a lovely part of Spain, surrounded with hills, mountains, and plains, bearing thin patches of cultivation, which altogether, taken as a group, form a picture that cannot fail to interest and strike the traveller, especially after having been tossed upon the foaming billows of the stormy and boisterous Bay of Biscay. Vigo is the seaport to the neighbouring provinces, which renders it of far more importance than either its appearance or its population would induce the traveller, paying it a transient visit, to give it credit for. We paid a visit to a small fort at the top of the hill, where the sentry, after much ado, admitted us. We then asked to be permitted to go over the place; when we received for answer, that by waiting ten minutes or so, we might see either the Commandant or the Governor. The place itself was not much larger than a stable-yard belonging to a good English inn. The Admiralty agent, who, as is usually, if not always, the case, had been a lieutenant in her Majesty's Navy, felt such an indignity passed upon him, as the repre-

sentative of the greatest maritime power in existence, by not being readily admitted to this twopenny fort, that he threatened to blow it into the air, not with explosions of gunpowder, 'but with a wide-mouthed, deep-lunged expiration of thorough contempt. The agent proposed that we should not do the Commandant the honour of an interview, especially as we were in a hurry; consequently, we bounded from a steep hill to the British consul's, to deliver the mail.

A word upon Spain, as we are now about to quit her coast for the Bay of Biscay; which most probably may disturb that equilibrium so necessary to calm reflection. When at Gibraltar I visited the towns of San Roque and Algesiras, where I found the grass growing in the streets, and almost an entire absence of what we in England should call business habits. Many of the better class of people, especially the men, appeared to have little else to do than to lounge about, clad in a great cloak even in fine weather, showing that their limbs, for want of wholesome exercise, were perhaps both cramped and cold. In talking with an Englishman at San Roque, he informed me that the inhabitants had only within a few years adopted the glass window, using as a substitute well-arranged holes in the wall—which, no doubt, must have been barricaded by some means or other to prevent the free intercourse of dogs and robbers. He remarked that the millers of his neighbourhood were far too simple-minded, and too much imbued either with gross ignorance or inactivity of thought and habit, to adulterate their flour.

A Spanish lady one day chatting freely with an

Englishman, remarked: "You come from a country where your abominable climate won't grow the orange, the olive, or the grape, or any other thing that would gratify the taste of a Spaniard. You grow coals in great quantities which are black, ugly, smoky, and suffocating, only fit to be consumed in those cold houses and colder climate which envelops the atmosphere of the frozen north. Think, sir, of the difference between the bright, glowing, golden fruit, cheering, grateful, and beautiful as the sun, and much cooler, and far more refreshing to taste; and your black, bituminous coal, which, when burning, throws an atmosphere of dirt into the air, and poisons the lungs of your inhabitants when they inhale it. Your men, too, are sordid and selfish beings, who instead of going out to the café, and other places of resort, where gaiety of manner, sprightliness of thought, and every kind of enjoyable conversation is carried on, are moping and melancholy, poring over their books from morning till night, until their minds are as much cramped, and where their confinement is as absolute an infringement of the law of liberty, as a sprightly bird in a dark cage." Such are the opinions of a Spanish lady in the middle of this great century, inhabiting a country with scarcely a railroad in it; where, except an occasional grand trunk-road, leading to the metropolis, the common roads are nothing but mule-tracks, and where the traveller has to wend his way, as he best can, over commons as wild as the sheep stations of Australia; where indolence and fortune-hunting, in a few of her colonies, have laid the foundation of the ruin of a magnificent empire. What would Charles V.

say if his shade were to visit the country that he left rich, vast, and glorious !

On quitting Vigo we steered with a favourable breeze towards that celebrated locality, the Bay of Biscay, which, as usual, we found in a greatly excited state—its waves running mountains high ; the wind, in nautical phraseology, blowing great guns. The first stiff gale we did not at all relish, but it was a mere puff to the second which we experienced, for so strong did it blow that the commander was compelled to heave to for no less than sixteen hours. On the abatement of the storm we renewed our voyage towards the English Channel, which we entered on the 9th, and the day following set foot once more on English ground, with a heart full of gratitude to that Almighty Being who rides on the whirlwind and directs the storm, for His great goodness, in restoring me to family and friends in health and strength, after a self-imposed journey of so many thousand miles, completed in nine months and five days ; and, for the information of intending travellers, I may state, at the expense of £380, or about threepence per mile—the fare of a first-class railway carriage in England.

THE END.

December Catalogue.

## NEW WORKS

PUBLISHED BY

J. F. HOPE,

16, GREAT MARLBOROUGH STREET, LONDON.

---

### NEW WORK ON INDIA.

Post 8vo, price 10s. 6d. (On the 10th.)

**A Gallop to the Antipodes; returning Overland**  
through India, &c. By John Shaw, M.D., F.G.S., F.L.S.,  
Author of "A Tramp to the Diggings," "A Ramble through  
the United States," "Recollections of Travel," &c.  
London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

In 3 vols., post 8vo, price 81s. 6d. Illustrated.

**Blight; or, the Novel Hater.** By the Author  
of "Good in Everything," &c.  
London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

In 1 vol., post 8vo, price 6s. (On the 10th.)

**London, Past, Present, and Future.** By  
John Ashford, Esq., Author of "Italy's Hope," &c.  
London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

In 2 vols., post 8vo, price 21s.

**Gilbert Midhurst, M.P.** By Charles F.  
Howard, Author of "Olympus," "Essays for the Age," &c.  
London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

In 1 vol., post 8vo, price 6s.

**A Legend of the Rhone.** By M. P. B.  
London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Royal 16mo, price 3s.

**Self.** By the Rev. E. Morse, A.B., Author  
of "Thoughts on the Hope of Resurrection," &c.

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 4s. (In a few days.)

**Frederick Netherby.** By C. W. N.

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 7s. 6d. (On the 10th.)

**The Flower of the Wilderness.** By W.

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 5s.

**The Pirate and other Poems.** By C. Boot.

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 3 vols., post 8vo, price 31s. 6d. (In the press.)

**Annette Doyme : A Story from Life.**

By I. E. Fenton, Editor of the "Adventures of Mrs.  
Colonel Somerset."

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Just published, in 1 vol., post 8vo, price 8s.

**Traces of Primitive Truth, &c., &c., &c.**

A Manual for Missions. By the Rev. John Lockhart  
Ross, M.A. Oxon., Vicar of Avebury-cum-Winterbourne,  
Monkton, Wilts, Author of "The Church and the Civil  
Power," "Letters on Secession to Rome," &c., &c., &c.

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Just ready. In 1 vol., price 3s.

**Sermons and Lectures delivered in a Country  
Church.** By the Rev. W. J. Hathway, B.A.

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 1 vol., post 8vo, price 10s. 6d. (Second Edition.)

**The Adventures of Mrs. Colonel Somerset in Caffraria.** Edited by I. E. Fenton.

"Mrs. Colonel Somerset encounters more adventures than Sindbad, and receives more blessings than Hatim Tai. . . . On the score of original observations as an African traveller she might wrangle with Dr. Livingstone. . . . And in the poetry of her reminiscences might have competed with Pietro della Valle."—*Athenæum*.

"Mrs. Somerset has some startling episodes to tell, which in another place might remind us of Munchausen."—*Weekly Dispatch*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Second Edition, in 1 vol., double post, price 2s. (On the 7th.)

**Liverpool Ho! A Matter-of-fact Story.**

By Powys Oswyn, Author of "Ernest Milman: A Tale of Manchester Life," "Ralph Deane," &c. &c.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, pp. 332, price 1s. 6d. Illuminated.

**The History of England in Rhyme, from the Conquest to the Restoration.**

"A delightful book for children and young people."

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 4s. Second Edition. (On the 6th.)

**Anecdotes of the Bench and Bar.**

By W. H. Grimmer.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

**THE NEW NOVEL.**

**Five Years of It.** By Alfred Austin.

"The characters are distinctly conceived, well discriminated, and consistently maintained, and the language is good."—*Saturday Review*.

"Mr. Austin can sustain a dialogue with animation, his sentiment is pleasing and refreshing, his descriptive passages spirited, and his style buoyant and polished."—*Morning Post*.

"There is a spirit and vitality about the book which argue well for the author's success."—*Athenæum*.

"To say that Mr. Austin's novel is a pleasing one—to say, which we must at once, that it is by far the best which has come from the printing press this year—would very inadequately express our opinion of its merits. It is not only the best of the season, but it is the best we have seen for many a season."—*Morning Chronicle*.

"A well-written and admirable story."—*Weekly Dispatch*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.



In 1 vol., post 8vo, price 7s. 6d. (Now ready.)

**The Privateer.** By C. Stone, Esq., 77th Regiment, Author of the "Rifle Catechism," "Aslané," &c.

"The tale is spiritedly and pleasantly narrated, and the interest never flags."—*Observer*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 2s. (Just ready.)

**The Rifle Catechism; or, the Philosophy of the Rifle.** By Cecil Stone, Esq., 77th Regiment, Author of "The Privateer," "Aslané," &c.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 2s. (Now ready.)

**Aslané.** A Tale of the Massacre of the Nestorian Christians. By C. Stone, Esq., 77th Regiment.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 2 vols., post 8vo, price 21s. (Now ready.)

**The House of Camelot.** A Tale of the Olden Time. By Miss Mary Linwood.

"The House of Camelot' comes to us as an agreeable variation among the novels which deal with Paris and Belgrave-square. It is written with care and enthusiasm, and may be recommended to constant readers who call at the circulating library."—*Leader*.

"The House of Camelot' is certainly the best of the novels lately published."—*Daily Telegraph*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 1 vol., post 8vo, 416 pp., price 10s. 6d.

**The Life and Times of Dante.**

By R. De Vericour, Professor of Languages and Literature in the Queen's University, Cork.

"Those who wish to obtain an accurate knowledge of the life and times of Dante we can refer to no better book than the one before us. . . . It is evidently a scholar's labour of love, and by far the best introduction in our language to Dante's works that we remember to have seen."—*Critic*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Second Edition, Second Series, now ready, price 6s. 6d.

### Brameld's Practical Sermons.

"Full of earnest thought and genial feeling."—*Athenæum*.

"A book of a thousand merits."—*Press*.

"The claims of personal religion are enforced with singular earnestness."—*John Bull*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Second Edition, much improved, price 6s.

### Thirty-four Practical Sermons.

By G. W. Brameld, M.A. Oxon., Vicar of East Markham, late Curate of Mansfield.

"Truly spiritual."—*John Bull*.

"Brief, earnest, and forcible."—*English Churchman*.

"These discourses are truly what they are termed in the title-page, practical. Mr. Brameld does not command belief, he persuades and convinces."—*Critic*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Just published, price 7s. 6d.

### Thirty Sermons, on Jonah, Amos, and Hosea.

By the Rev. W. Drake, M.A., Lecturer of St. John Baptist Church, Coventry; Hebrew Examiner in the University of London; and late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Just published, price 6d.

### The Prophecy of Koshru, &c. Translated

by J. D., and Edited by M.D.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Just published, price 4d.

### Christian Fear. A Sermon preached by desire of the Congregation. By John Barton, Curate of Rivenhall.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

NEW WORK BY MRS. ROBERT CARTWRIGHT.

In 2 vols., post 8vo, price £1 1s.

### The Royal Sisters; or, Pictures of a Court.

By Mrs. R. Cartwright, Author of "Lamia," "Christabelle,"  
"Ambrose the Sculptor," &c. &c.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 2 vols., post 8vo, price 21s. (Shortly.)

### Gilbert Midhurst, M.P. By Chas. F. Howard.

"A more fearless, out-spoken writer never took pen in hand. He is in earnest in his beliefs and disbeliefs—in his loves and hates—in his scorn and contempt."—*Globe*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 1 vol., post 8vo, price 3s.

### Olympus. By the same Author.

"It is with regret that we close the pages of this clever book. We recommend our readers strongly to peruse it for themselves. They will find brave thoughts and noble words in it."—*The Press*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 1 vol., post 8vo, price 2s.

### Essays for the Age. By Chas. F. Howard, Author of "Gilbert Midhurst, M.P."

"The author of these essays, in whom we also recognize the author of 'Olympus,' is a bold and original thinker, who has the faculty of expressing his thoughts in terse, vigorous, and sententious language. We remember well his 'Olympus'—and what a book was that! How daring and subtle in its speculation—how cutting in its satire—how withering in its scorn! The ability of the author was apparent in every page."—*Morning Post*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 1 vol., post 8vo, price 8s. 6d.

### Perseus and his Philosophies. By the same Author.

"It is instructive, and, in more ways than one, original. If the ideas strike us at times as not new, it is because they find a ready echo in the heart, and all deep pondering hath this silent response within us—the strong and more familiar, the more novel and profound."—*Court Journal*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 1 vol., post 8vo, price 10s. 6d.

### The Odd Confidant; or, "Handsome is that Handsome Does." By Dot.

"The 'Odd Confidant' is an interesting tale, with a good moral, most pleasantly and ably worked out. It shows, with considerable power, the ill effects produced on girls by the baneful system of educating them at French schools, and the unhappiness that always ensues from the practices of concealment or deceit. . . . We cannot conclude our notice better than by heartily recommending the book for the perusal of young girls just entering upon the dangerous gaieties of fashionable life."—*Court Circular*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Second Edition, post 8vo, price 3s. 6d. (Now ready.)

**Preaching, Prosing, and Puseyism, with other  
Peas of the Pod.** By Feltham Burghley, Author of  
"Sir Edwin Gilderoy," &c.

"We have much pleasure in recommending this exceedingly clever, sparkling, learned, and out-spoken *brochure* to all our readers. Whatever some may think of its sentiments, all competent and candid judges will grant its vigour, earnestness, power, and talent—a power which sometimes approaches the transcendent, and a talent which often overpasses the verge of true genius."—*Critic*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 3s. 6d.

**The Sea. Sketches of a Voyage to Hudson's  
Bay; and other Poems.** By "The Scald."

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 1 vol., post 8vo, price 10s. 6d. (Just Published.)

**Juvenile Crime: its Causes, Character, and  
Cure.** By S. P. Day, Author of "Monastic Institutions," &c.

"No one can read this volume without being convinced that Mr. Day has thoroughly mastered the subject with which he deals. . . . It is an elaborate, enlightened, and temperately but forcibly written work, and does credit alike to the intelligence and to the heart of the author. . . . Mr. Day has discharged his task well, and produced a manual which ought to be placed in the hands of every statesman and philanthropist."—*Morning Post*.

"The matter brought together is ample, and lucidly arranged, and Mr. Day himself seems to have devoted no superficial study to the problem he is ambitious of solving."—*Athenaeum*.

"The very latest of our statistical publications confirm his (Mr. Day's) conclusions, and teach us that the mass of crimes which now plague the community are preventible."—*Leader*.

"Mr. Day seems to have carefully studied the latest statistics of criminality, and we can honestly recommend his work to the attention of those whose interest it is that crime should decrease and morality increase—and whom does this not interest?"—*Critic*.

"The work abounds in important facts, culled from unquestionable sources. There can be little doubt that this volume will attract the goodwill as well as the attention of the thinking community."—*Observer*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Just published, Vol. I., price 7s. 6d.; Vol. II., price 10s. 6d. Beautifully  
Illustrated.

**History and Antiquities of Roxburghshire  
and Adjacent Districts, from the most remote period to the  
present time.** By Alexander Jeffrey, Esq., Author of  
"Guide to Antiquities of the Borders," &c.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Demy 8vo, price 3s.

**Duty to Parents: Honour thy Father and thy Mother.** By a Clergyman of the Church of England.

"A useful companion to persons newly confirmed."—*Guardian*.

"Excellent in its purpose and contents."—*Spectator*.

"This excellent little volume may assist the parents above alluded to. It is a well-planned, well-executed book."—*Leader*.

"This little book, placing the duty on its true Scriptural basis, would be a useful present to most young gentlemen, and even to some young ladies too."—*Churchman's Magazine*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

**STARTLING NEW WORK.**

Vol. I., post 8vo, price 5s. (Second Edition, in January, Revised.)

**Holland: its Institutions, Press, Kings, and Prisons; with an awful Exposure of Court Secrets and Intrigues.** By E. Meeter.

"The work is written in a style which stamps the author as a master of our language, and it bears upon its every page the reality of truth."

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 1s. 6d.

**Arnold: a Dramatic History.**

By Cradock Newton.

"There is exquisite beauty in 'Arnold.'"—*Glasgow Commonwealth*.

"'Arnold' is a book of real poetry. It is full of beauty, and will be felt to be so by all who have a lover's passion for the great and small things both of nature and of thought, and whose delight is to see them dressed in poetic fancies again and again."—*Inquirer*.

"In toiling across a wide desert of arid verse, we are too delighted to meet with the sound of a spring or the fragrance of a flower not to give it a welcome. Of the kind have we found in 'Arnold.' There are evident touches of poetry in it. The stream of the verse has a gleam of gold. The author is apparently very young, but has undoubtedly shown that he possesses the poetic temperament. An unusually pure tone and purpose in the book augur well for the future of the writer. The various lyrics show a sense of music in verse. The patrons of our minstrels will do well not to pass this little pamphlet by."—*Athenæum*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 4s. (Ready.)

**Wild Notes.** By E. Passingham.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Price 3s. Second Edition.

**The Young Lady's First French Book, with  
a Vocabulary of the French and English, and the English  
and French, of all the words used in the Book. By  
R. Aliva.**

"This work is decidedly the best we have yet seen of the kind, and we observe that our opinion is backed by our numerous contemporaries."—*Courier*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 1s. 6d.

**Sir Hieram's Daughter, and other Poems.**

By R. Villiers Sankey, Author of "Poetical Romances and Ballads."

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 2s. 6d.

**First Steps in British History, for the use  
of Schools and Private Families. By the late Tutor to the  
Earl of Glamorgan.**

"The 'young nobleman' is the Earl of Glamorgan, and whoever his tutor is, we feel on the perusal of these pages, that he is a man worthy to be trusted. The leading facts of British history are thrown into the form of a narrative, so simple that a child of six years may understand it. Taking this excellent nursery-book from beginning to end, we should say that the main facts are truthfully stated, and the great religious and constitutional principles guarded with a vigilance that would have done credit to the authors of many more pretentious books."—*Christian Times*.

"A concise and well-written summary of the history of England, from the invasion of Julius Cæsar to our own times. The language is simple, and, as the title premises, adapted to the comprehension of very young children; and the author, not satisfied himself with the bare recital of historical events, seizes every opportunity of inculcating good principles by pointing out those actions worthy of admiration and imitation, and those which should, contrariwise, be shunned."—*Britannia*.

"'First Steps in British History' is that rarest but most valuable of all educational works—a really simple and intelligible composition, adapted to the capacities of children. It is the best English History for schools we have yet seen."—*Critic*.

"'First Steps in British History,' being letters to a young nobleman by his tutor, is a summary of the leading events of the History of England, written in a plain, familiar style."—*Literary Gazette*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 5s.

### Christian Politics.

By the Rev. Henry Christmas, M.A., Author of "The Cradle of the Twin Giants," "Echoes of the Universe," "Shores and Islands of the Mediterranean," &c.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 2s. (In January.)

### Family Interests: a Story taken from Life.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 8s.

### Julia; or, The Neapolitan Marriage.

By Margaret Tulloh.

"This work should be read by all who wish to possess a thorough knowledge of Neapolitan life."

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In 1 vol., demy 8vo, price 10s. 6d.

### A Ramble through the United States, Canada, and the West Indies. By John Shaw, M.D., F.G.S., F.L.S., Author of "A Tramp to the Diggings," &c.

"This is a most valuable work at the present time," &c. "This book is remarkable."—*Press*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, 1 vol., price 2s. (Cheap Second Edition.)

### Ernest Milman: a True Tale of Manchester Life. By P. Oswyn, Author of "Ralph Deane," &c.

"This work will doubtless be eagerly sought after."—*Manchester Spectator*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Lately published, in 1 vol., post 8vo, price 2s. 6d., cloth 3s. 6d.

### China: a Popular History, with a Chronological Account of the most Remarkable Events from the earliest period to the present day. By Sir Oscar Oliphant, Kt.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Demy 8vo, price 7s. 6d., Illustrated. Second Edition.

**Lays of Love and Heroism, Legends, Lyrics,  
and other Poems.** By Eleanor Darby, Author of "The  
Sweet South."

"The authoress is already well and favourably known to the British public by her previous publication, under the title of 'The Sweet South.' The appearance of the present volume will but call forth a repetition of those high encomiums which were so plentifully bestowed upon her former effort. The 'Lily o' Dundee' is of itself sufficient to show the distinguished abilities of the authoress, displaying, as it does, in a very high degree, her power, pathos, and poetic skill. The volume, as a whole, cannot fail to contribute very materially to the popularity of the accomplished authoress; and it deserves a very extensive circulation."—*Morning Advertiser*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Post 8vo, price 4s. Illustrated.

**The Sweet South; or, a Month at Algiers.**  
By Eleanor Darby.

For the excellent Reviews of this Work see *Athenæum*,  
*Observer*, *Literary Gazette*, *Critic*, *Courier*, &c.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Fcap. 8vo, price 2s. 6d.

**On the Search for a Dinner.** By W. R. Hare.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Price 1s. 6d.

**Thoughts on the Revision of the Prayer-  
Book, and of the Terms of Clerical Conformity.** By the  
Rev. J. R. Pretymann, M.A., late Vicar of Aylesbury, Bucks.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Price 3d. each, or 20s. per 100. (Third Edition.)

**An Elementary Religious Catechism; being  
a Compendium of the chief Truths and Events revealed in  
the Holy Scriptures, as expounded and commemorated by  
the Church of England.** By the Rev. Henry Kemp, M.A.,  
Head Master of Clebury-Mortimer Endowed Schools.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.



Price 1s.

**A Day on the Downs, by the Vale of White Horse.**London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Demy 8vo, price 12s. 6d.

**Switzerland in 1854-5 : a Book of Travel, Men, and Things.** By the Rev. W. G. Heathman, B.A., Rector of St. Lawrence, Exeter, late British Chaplain at Interlaken.London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Post 8vo, 1 vol., price 8s. (Ready.)

**Dearforgil, Princess of Brefney : an Historical Romance.** By the Author of "The Last Earl of Desmond."London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Post 8vo, price 3s. 6d.

**Reflections on the Mysterious Fate of Sir John Franklin.** By James Parsons.London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Post 8vo, 1 vol., price 6s.

**Voyages to China, India, and America.**

By W. S. S. Bradshaw.

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Post 8vo, 1 vol., price 4s. (Ready.)

**Italy's Hope : a Tale of Florence.**

By John Ashford, Author of "The Lady and the Hound."

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Post 8vo, price 2s.

**The Lady and the Hound.** By John Ashford.

London : J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Post 8vo, price 7s. 6d. Illustrated. (Just ready.)

**Poems. By "Sir Oscar Oliphant."**

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Post 8vo, price 7s. 6d.

**Mess-Table Stories, Anecdotes, and Pasquinades, to Promote Mirth and Good Digestion. By Hoin Sirmoon.**

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

**DR. E. LEE ON NICE AND MALAGA.**

Demy 12mo, price 2s. 6d.

**Nice and its Climate. With Notices of the Coast from Genoa to Marseilles, and Observations on the Influence of Climate on Pulmonary Consumption.**

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Price 1s. 6d.

**The Nurse and the Nursery: being a Digest of Important Information with regard to the Early Training and Management of Children; together with Directions for the Treatment of Accidents apt to occur in the Nursery, and which every Nurse, Nursery Governess, and Mother ought to know.**

"The instructions which he conveys are expressed in plain and intelligible terms, and no nurse or mother ought to be without them."—*Morning Post*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Post 8vo, price 5s. (In the press.)

**Joan of Arc, and other Poems.**

By Bonnore Berther.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

WORKS BY THE REV. WILLIAM DUFF SCHOMBERG, B.A.,  
VICAR OF POLESWORTH.

DR. PUSEY REFUTED.

In post 8vo, 4s. cloth. (Ready.)

**The Doctrine of the Holy Eucharist Investigated: Modern Innovations of its Purity Examined and brought to the test of Scripture, the Testimony of the Ancient Fathers, and the Declarations of the Church of England.** By the Rev. John Duff Schomberg, B.A., Vicar of Polesworth.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

Price 3d. (Just Published.)

**The Pretensions of the Church of Rome to be considered Older than the Church of England, examined.**

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

Price 1s.

**Protestant Catholicism; or, the Characteristics of Catholicism as inherited, and maintained, under Protest, by the Church of England.**

"The reader will find that he has at his fingers' ends a mass of information and argument."—*Church and State Gazette*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

In demy 12mo, price 2s. 6d., cloth. Second Edition, with copious Additions.

**Elements of the British Constitution, containing a comprehensive View of the Monarchy and Government of England.**

"It is precisely what it professes to be, an exposition of the 'Elements of the British Constitution;' and as such it is deserving of a place in every Englishman's library, and should be early placed in the hands of every English schoolboy. It is comprehensive without being diffuse; clear in its statement of principles without cumbering the mind with details."—*Liverpool Courier*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

Price 6d.

**Political Protestantism, designed for the First  
Forms at Schools and for Young Men leaving their Homes  
for the engagements of Public life.**

**\*\* The Profits of this Work are devoted to the Society of  
Church Missions in Ireland.**

"The work consists of 78 pages of well-selected matter, drawn from valuable historical resources, and puts the question of Church and State, and the aggressions of Popery, in its proper light."—*Shropshire Conservative Journal*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

---

In 2 vols., large 8vo, price 10s.

**The Theocratic Philosophy of English History,  
Showing the Rise and Progress of the British Empire. In  
which the events of History are traced to their proper origin,  
the characters of persons whose actions have influenced  
the progress of Society delineated, and the overruling Pro-  
vidence of God vindicated.**

"In this age of ephemeral publications, seldom does it fall to the lot of a reviewer to enjoy the privilege of calling public attention to a work of such profound research, written in such powerful and concise language, and presenting the result of years of patient investigation of an Almighty power unravelling the entangled web of human affairs. If to justify the ways of God to man—if to exhibit Divine benevolence educing ultimate good out of apparent evil; making 'the wrath of man to praise Him,' and overruling every event to subserve the grand designs of Providence;—if such an attempt executed by an author possessing in combination mental powers of no common order, has long been a desideratum, we are enabled to announce the completion of a task which will continue an imperishable memorial of the talent, and genius, and perseverance of Mr. Schomberg."—*Church Intelligencer*.

London: J. F. Hope, 16, Great Marlborough-street.

**IMPORTANT TO AUTHORS.**

---

**NEW PUBLISHING ARRANGEMENTS.**

---

**J. F. HOPE,**

**16, GREAT MARLBOROUGH STREET,**

By his New Publishing Arrangements, CHARGES NO COMMISSION for Publishing Books Printed by him until the Author has been repaid his original outlay. And, as all Works entrusted to his care are Printed in the very best style, and at prices far below the usual charges, AUTHORS ABOUT TO PUBLISH will find it much to their advantage to apply to him.

Specimens, Estimates, and all particulars forwarded gratuitously, by return of post.









